“NARRATIVE HISTORY” AMOUNTS TO FABULATION, THE REAL STUFF BEING MERE CHRONOLOGY
WALDEN: The last inhabitant of these woods before me was an Irishman, Hugh Quoil, (if I have spelt his name with coil enough,) who occupied Wyman’s tenement, –Col. Quoil, he was called. Rumor said that he had been a soldier at Waterloo. If he had lived I should have made him fight his battles over again. His trade here was that of a ditcher. Napoleon went to St. Helena; Quoil came to Walden Woods. All I know of him is tragic. He was a man of manners, like one who has seen the world, and was capable of more civil speech than you could well attend to. He wore a great coat in mid-summer, being affected with the trembling delirium, and his face was the color of carmine. He died in the road at the foot of Brister’s Hill shortly after I came to the woods, so that I have not remembered him as a neighbor. Before his house was pulled down, when his comrades avoided it as “an unlucky castle,” I visited it. There lay his old clothes curled up by use, as if they were himself, upon his raised plank bed. His pipe lay broken on the hearth, instead of a bowl broken at the fountain. The last could never have been the symbol of his death, for he confessed to me that, though he had heard of Brister’s Spring, he had never seen it; and soiled cards, kings of diamonds spades and hearts, were scattered over the floor. One black chicken which the administrator could not catch, black as night and as silent, not even croaking, awaiting Reynard, still went to roost in the next apartment. In the rear there was the dim outline of a garden, which had been planted but had never received its first hoeing, owing to those terrible shaking fits, thought it was now harvest time. It was over-run with Roman wormwood and beggar-ticks, which last stuck to my clothes for all fruit. The skin of a woodchuck was freshly stretched upon the back of the house, a trophy of his last Waterloo; but no warm cap or mittens would he want more.
May 21, Saturday: On the day that would become known as “St. Helena Day,” Admiral João da Nova, returning toward Portugal after defeating the fleet of the Zamorin of Calicut on the west coast of India, came across a previously unknown uninhabited island far out in the Atlantic Ocean. The Portuguese anchored in the lee of the island opposite a deep valley.

This valley would soon become a stop-off at which to obtain fresh provisions in the several-month voyage between Portugal and Mozambique. A timber chapel would be erected, and later the valley would host the Jamestown settlement.

Nobody could guess what would happen next.
Portuguese naval general Alfonso de Albuquerque died at the entrance to Goa harbor, whereupon Fernão Lopez seems to have stowed himself away aboard a vessel bound for Lisbon. When this Portuguese ship stopped at St. Helena for food and water, he asked to be left behind there as a hermit. When he landed he was in the company of three or four black slaves (we have no idea what subsequently became of these others) and they were left with a barrel of biscuits, some dried meat and fish, a tinderbox, and a saucepan. It would be nearly a year before another ship would drop anchor at this island.

**LIFE IS LIVED FORWARD BUT UNDERSTOOD BACKWARD?**
— **NO, THAT’S GIVING TOO MUCH TO THE HISTORIAN’S STORIES.**
**LIFE ISN’T TO BE UNDERSTOOD EITHER FORWARD OR BACKWARD.**
Fernão Lopez, a Portuguese on his way back toward Europe from India, had chosen to remain behind at the St. Helena stopover. About a year had passed before another ship appeared. There is a contemporary account of this 1st encounter with the disfigured hermit of the island, in a Hakluyt Society journal:

The crew was amazed when they saw the grotto and the straw bed on which he slept ... and when they saw the clothing they agreed it must be a Portuguese man. So they took in their water and did not meddle with anything, but left biscuits and cheeses and things to eat and a letter telling him not to hide himself the next time a ship came to the Rooster for no one would harm him. Then the ship set off, and as she was spreading her sails a cockerel fell overboard and the waves carried it to the shore and Lopez caught it and fed it with some rice which they had left behind for him.
The cockerel became his sole companion. During the night it would roost above his head and during the day it would follow along behind him, coming if he called to it. He made himself useful around the growing settlement on the island, tending livestock, working the soil, and planting various fruit trees and grasses. After about a decade of this, Lopez agreed to return to Portugal to visit his family. He would have an audience with King João III and then travel to Rome for an audience with Clement VII in which the Pope would absolve him of his sin of apostasy. With that under his belt, he would return to St. Helena and his hermit existence.
The initial African slaves were imported to labor in the canefields of Cuba.

At about this point, by command of King João III, Fernão Lopez returned to Portugal and visited his family of origin. Going to Rome, Pope Clement VII granted him an audience and forgave his Moslem apostasy. The maimed hermit then returned to St. Helena (the Pope hadn’t given him back his ears).

Congolese king Mbemba Nzinga protested to King João III that Portuguese merchants were “taking every day our natives, sons of the land and sons of our noblemen and our vassals and our relatives.” The king was a convert to Christianity and he alleged that the slavers were depopulating his country.
The disfigured hermit Fernão Lopez died on St. Helena. Apart from a visit to Europe during which he had been allowed to confess his sin of apostasy directly to Pope Clement VII in Rome and be absolved, he had spent the remaining decades of his life in solitary penance on that island.

WHAT I’M WRITING IS TRUE BUT NEVER MIND
YOU CAN ALWAYS LIE TO YOURSELF
1571

The chapel that would give Chapel Valley, St. Helena its name was erected.
June 8, Saturday (Old Style): When Captain Thomas Cavendish came ashore at St. Helena during the final stage of his voyage around the world with the Desire, he found the island in regular use by Portuguese sailors on voyages to and from the East Indies. They had erected a church and two houses, planted vegetables and herbs, and were allowing pigs and goats to forage and multiply.
Captain Abraham Kendall’s *Royal Merchant*,¹ part of the 1st fleet of English East Indiamen on their way east, stopped off at *St. Helena* because its crew was suffering from scurvy (they would recover).²

1. This was not the *Royal Merchant* that would go down with a cargo of Spanish gold off Land’s End, Cornwall — that wreck would not be occurring until another two generations of human life had come and gone.
2. This was not the Abraham Kendall who would be floating around Middlesex County in the Massachusetts Bay Colony — that one wouldn’t come along for another three generations of human life.
King Felipe II of Spain (“Felipe el Prudente,” who was also King Filipe I of Portugal) warned his fleet not to stop by the island of St. Helena while on their way home from Goa laden with treasure (he had been made aware that English privateers would be lying in wait).

DO I HAVE YOUR ATTENTION? GOOD.
April 3, Tuesday (Old Style): George Herbert was born into a wealthy, eminent, and artistic family of Montgomery in Wales. His father Richard Herbert, Lord of Cherbury (“the son of Edward Herbert, knight, the son of Richard Herbert, knight, the son of the famous Sir Richard Herbert of Colebrook, who was the youngest brother of the memorable William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke who lived in the reign of our King Edward the Fourth”), would die while George was three, leaving a widow and ten children. His mother Magdalen Newport Herbert was a patron and friend of John Donne and other poets. His elder brother Edward Herbert, later Lord Herbert of Cherbury, has been referred to as “the father of English deism.” George would receive a proper education that would lead to prominent positions at Trinity College, Cambridge, and in the Parliament.

Captain Sir James Lancaster VI, returning from the 1st trading voyage of the East India Company, anchored off Chapel Valley at St. Helena to refresh his crew.
Between this year and 1614, first “The Governor and Company of Merchants of London Trading into the East Indies” was chartered by Queen Elizabeth, and then the Dutch, Danish, and French East India Companies were being founded:

In the first voyage made to the East Indies on account of the English East India Company [1600] there were employed four ships commanded by Captain James Lancaster, their General, viz. the Dragon, having the General and 202 men, the Hector 108 men, the Susan 82 and the Ascension 32. They left England about 18 April; in July the people were taken ill on their passage with the scurvy; by the first of August all the ships except the General’s were so thin of men that they had scarce enough to hand the sails; and upon a contrary wind for fifteen or sixteen days the few who were well before began also to fall sick. Whence the want of hands was so great in these ships that the merchants who were sent to dispose of their cargoes in the East Indies were obliged to take their turn at the helm and do the sailors duty till they arrived at Saldanha [near the Cape of Good Hope]; where the General sent his boats and went on board himself to assist the other three ships, who were in so weakly a condition that they were hardly able to let fall an anchor without his assistance. All this time the General’s ship continued pretty healthy. The reason why his crew was in better health than the rest of the ships was owing to the juice of lemons of which the General having brought some bottles to sea, he gave to each, as long as it lasted, three spoonfuls every morning fasting. By this he cured many of his men and preserved the rest; so that although his ship contained double the number of any of the others yet (through the mersey of God and to the preservation of the other three ships) he neither had so many men sick, nor...
lost so many as they did. 3

Freed of the Spanish yoke and the intermediary for a vast store of riches from the Eastern hemisphere, Amsterdam suddenly became the most prosperous city of Europe. “They never complain of the pains they take, and go as merrily to the Indies, as if they were going to their Countrey Houses.” Holland’s population would be doubling every decade. Brownists and Jews were welcomed, if not exactly with open arms.

3. Reverend Samuel Purchas. HAKLYUYTUS POSTHUMUS OR PURCHAS HIS PILGRIMES, OR AS A RELATION OR IOURNALL OF THE BEGINNING AND PROCEEDINGS OF THE ENGLISH PLANTATION SETTLED AT PLIMOTH, IN NEW-ENGLAND, BY CERTAINE …
Tea from China was shipped to Europe for the 1st time by the Dutch East India Company.

Barent Langenes of Amsterdam presumably prepared the representation of St. Helena on the following screen from a Portuguese source:
June: Upon François Pryard’s 2d visit to St. Helena, the Portuguese chapel erected in 1541 in “Chapel Valley” had been desecrated. This would be interpreted as an act of revenge by the Dutch, who were accusing the Portuguese of stealing letters left in Chapel Valley for other Dutch ships (there were indications that those left by the Portuguese were also stolen, presumably by the Dutch).
June: John Hatch in the *James* spent 7 days resting his crew at St. Helena. During this time they caught about 50 pigs and goats and picked about 4,000 lemons for the ship’s stores.

June 3, Sunday (Old Style): Charter of the Dutch West India Company.
February 19, Saturday (1621, Old Style): Arrival at St. Helena of the Roebuck, captain Richard Swan. Two Dutch ships were at anchor.

February 22, Tuesday (1621, Old Style): In the harbor of St. Helena the Dutch Wappen caught fire while bearing a cargo of cloves from Amboyna in the Spice Islands (for such a cargo of spice to catch fire was disastrously costly).
June: The body of John Darby, Master’s Mate, was buried at the chapel that would give Chapel Valley, St. Helena its name (the chapel had been constructed in 1571 and, though it had suffered at the hands of visiting crews, was still in evidence).
April 15, Monday (Old Style): The Dutch government of the United Provinces laid a claim to the island of St. Helena.
Although some stories have William Kidd as being born to the family of a clergyman in this year, he was probably born instead in 1654 in or around Dundee, on the east coast of Scotland, because in 1695, when he testified under oath in the case of Jackson and Jacobs v. Noell in the High Court of the Admiralty of England, he would give his age as 41 years and his place of birth as Dundee — this is supported by an entry in the Dundee parish register of baptisms, plus the fact that he would name his black cabin boy “Dundee.” His father is listed in these records as a seaman. The surname “Kidd” occurs frequently in Fife. There is a small sea box inscribed “William Kidd — Leith,” and it is plausible that he would have joined his first ship as a young deck-hand sailing out of Leith, also on the east coast of Scotland.

4. There is only one factoid to support the idea that he had been born in the year 1645 — in the written statement of Paul Lorain, the Minister in Attendance at Kidd’s execution in 1701, his age was given at about 56.
In this year a message was inscribed on an exposed surface at the harbor of the lonely island of St. Helena in the South Atlantic:
June: Jan Van Riebeeck, founder of the initial Dutch settlement in South Africa, stopped by St. Helena with his son Abraham who would become a Governor-General of the Dutch East Indies. Van Riebeeck recorded in his journal the visit of the Tulp the crew of which took aboard pigs, apple saplings, and horses (horses had been left to forage for themselves and breed, to be captured by crews of following vessels).
In 1600, Queen Elizabeth had granted a Royal Charter establishing “The Governor and Company of Merchants of London Trading into the East Indies.” At this point another such Charter, granted by Lord Protector Oliver Cromwell’s commonwealth, chartered a British East India Company to fortify and colonize any of its establishments and to transport settlers, stores, and ammunition. Because of the potential importance of St. Helena as a fortress and staging-post on the way home from India, this Company prepared to claim that island.

Named to the newly-constituted House of Lords, Major-General William Goffe would remain loyal until the Lord Protector’s natural death on September 3, 1658.
November: Merchants of the British East India Company petition the Admiralty to send a man of war to St. Helena to protect the next convoy of East Indiamen expected from India the following summer. The Admiralty agreed to despatch the *Marmaduke* with 150 men and 36 guns.

December: The East India Company’s Court of Directors decided it would be to their advantage to colonize and fortify St. Helena, and create plantations. Captain John Dutton was appointed to lead a company of 40 men to establish this, the British East India Company’s initial overseas settlement.
January (1658, Old Style): The British East India Company drew up plans for Captain John Dutton to plant and fortify St. Helena while establishing a settlement.

May 5, Thursday (Old Style): Captain John Dutton (and wife) took possession “with trumpet and drum” of the British East India Company’s initial settlement — the still-uninhabited island of St. Helena. The building of the fort was commenced immediately and a little town sprang up in Chapel Valley which would subsequently be designated Jamestown in honor of Duke of York James.

John Evelyn’s diary entry for this day was in part as follows:

I went to visite my Bro, & next day to see a new Opera after the Italian way in Recitative Music & Seceanes, much inferior to the Italian composure & magnificence: but what was prodigious, that in a time of such publique Consternation, such a Vanity should be kept up or permitted; I being ingag’d with company, could not decently resist the going to see it, though my heart smote me for it: I returnd home:
The Reverend Thomas Fuller, D.D. ’s final preferment was that of becoming the Chaplain Extraordinary to King Charles II.

The 1st Royal Charter of King Charles II confirmed the English East India Company’s right to possess, fortify, and settle the island of St. Helena on behalf of the Crown.

Summer: The Reverend Thomas Fuller, D.D. visited the western region of England in connexion with the business of his prebend, which had been restored to him.

When Captain John Dutton departed from St. Helena, his position was filled by a Lieutenant Robert Stringer who had but 30 men with whom to garrison this outpost of empire.
John Dryden’s heroic/comic tragedy *Secret Love*, and his poem *annus mirabilis*, a nationalistic and royalist effort celebrating victories over the Dutch and the survival of the city of London. Meanwhile the Triple Alliance was getting underway and King Charles II was entering into a secret alliance with the French.

Despite attempts to attract settlers, colonists were coming to the island of St. Helena only in small numbers. However, during this year some victims of the Great Fire of London arrived. Each settler was given a parcel of land in freehold, but with this came an obligation to assist in the maintenance of the fortifications and to act as part of the defending force.
The East India Company, mindful of the spiritual need of their employees, dispatched to their settlement on the island of St. Helena the 1st of a long sequence of Church of England chaplains. An early, modest little church would be replaced by a slightly larger one in 1674, but this would probably not be called St. James until replaced again by the present church in 1774. Another church would be built shortly afterwards near the present St. Paul’s.
March: Metacom paraded his Wampanoag warriors through Swansea displaying their weapons. Called into court in Plymouth town, he acknowledged preparations for war.5

New governor Richard Coney arrived at St. Helena accompanied by new chaplain Richard Noakes (who would have a problem with alcohol). Governor Coney would regard the whole bunch of settlers as “drunks and ne’er-do-wells,” and would be seized by his council and put aboard a ship back to England on August 21, 1672.

5. What on earth was he thinking of, other than collective suicide? Even if he could get every red tribe in New England to side with his own band of warriors, there were only 18,000 native Americans in total, by way of contrast with 60,000 English inhabitants. The white population had the red population outnumbered by 3 to 1! –The answer is, that Metacom seriously underestimated the racial aspect of this conflict. He did not understand that all the whites would regard any red conflict with any of the whites as a red conflict with all the whites, which needed to result in the extermination of all the reds. He wasn’t enough of a racist to be able to comprehend that. He presumed that his tribe could go to war against Plymouth Colony, and the other colonies of the United Colonies of New England would more or less stand by and watch the contest as in all likelihood the other native tribes would more or less stand by and watch the contest if there were a mere intra-racial dispute between, say, his Wampanoag and the Narragansett.
August 21, Wednesday (Old Style): Governor Richard Coney was seized by the St. Helena Council and put aboard a ship back to England.

December: Four Dutch ships arrive off St. Helena from the Cape carrying 180 soldiers and 150 sailors. A landing party came ashore at Lemon Valley but was repelled by English planters hurling rocks from above. A discontented settler named William Coxe led the Dutch to a more remote and safer landing place, Swanley Valley. From there the Dutch made their way to High Peak and then Jamestown.
January (1672, Old Style): Captain Sir Richard Munden sailed in the Assistance with a squadron from England, not knowing he would meet Governor Anthony Beale’s ship Humphrey & Elizabeth 7 miles from St. Helena and play a major part in retaking the island from the Dutch.

January 1, Wednesday (1672, Old Style): When a Dutch force under Jacob de Gens captured the Jamestown settlement on St. Helena, British governor Anthony Beale and his followers could but flee on the Humphrey & Elizabeth and make toward Brazil (the ship would be met by English reinforcements 7 miles out, and in May the English would be able to reclaim the outpost but would not reinstate him in his position of Governor).

May 15, Thursday (Old Style): Forces under Captain Sir Richard Munden obliged the Dutch on St. Helena to surrender (this kerfuffle between the Dutch East India Company and the English East India Company would be the final, and indeed the only, dispute concerning possession of that waystation of empire).

June: The Dutch had been expelled from St. Helena during the previous month, and first Sir Richard Munden and then Richard Kelgwin had become Governor, but naval skirmishes with Dutch ships sailing homeward from the Cape continued. When 7 Dutch vessels were sighted a warning signal was sent to the fort. Shore batteries were discharged and the Dutch vessels sailed away into the night.

Hey for the good old days! The Reverend Thomas Olney, Jr., the pastor of the 1st Baptist Church in Providence, Rhode Island and a local politician, decried the new Quaker willingness to hold office in government, pointing out that “There was none of this in old time” — before Friend George Fox had arrived on the colonial scene and had recommended it.
December 16, Tuesday (Old Style): The 2d Royal Charter of King Charles II to the British East India Company dealt specifically with St. Helena, and sought to correct the mistakes revealed by its brief Dutch capture — confirming the significance of the island as a fortress, and to emphasize its importance to the Crown as a waystation of empire.
Governor Richard Kelgwin of St. Helena was seized by disgruntled settlers and soldiers, only to be rescued upon the chance arrival of an East India Company fleet. He was replaced as governor by Captain Gregory Field.

Between this year and 1693, on the island of Barbados under the regime of Governor Jonathan Atkins, over 300 Quakers would be fined more than a total of £10,000 for offenses such as refusing to support either the established Church or the island’s militia. This governor characterized the island’s Quakers as “most repugnant to all laws and orders.”
Edmond Halley was for six weeks the guest of the British East India Company at their St. Helena colony in the South Atlantic for purposes of observation of the exceedingly rare transit of the planet Venus across the face of the sun. He spent most of his period on the island studying and theorizing about its hydrological cycle, upon the basis of a concept of recirculating fluid which had quite possibly been inspired by Harvey’s 1630s discovery of the recirculation of the body’s blood. We were on our way toward a new formal science in which we would not only be able to think of the planet’s surface phenomena as constituting a single self-regulating system, but also toward an abstract science of the cybernetics of self-regulating systems, neither of which had been latent within earlier patterns of thought.

Halley’s cybernetic recirculation study constitutes one of the first systematic evaluations of environmental processes and, like all others subsequent to that date, since it points in the direction of inherent limits upon exploitation rather than toward enhanced opportunities for exploitation — has been entirely ignored.

Geminiano Montanari claimed to have sighted a meteor which was making a sound. He alleged that the sound it made was like “the rattling of a great Cart running over Stones.” Since he was an astronomer, he was able to calculate that the altitude of the meteor, while he was hearing this curious rattling noise, was 38 miles.
June 19, Wednesday (Old Style): Governor Major John Blackmore’s *Johanna* arrived at St. Helena with soldiers and passengers some of whom would leave their names permanently in the island’s populace — names such as Trap, Chubb, Downing, and Rowland.

September: Due to heat damage to St. James Church on St. Helena, repairs were necessary that would be funded by the island’s inhabitants at a rate not to exceed 12 pence per year.

December: When, on St. Helena, 2 soldiers manning the Crane Battery were crushed by falling rocks, a stout timber shelter was erected.
February (1678, Old Style): Ships visiting St. Helena were accused of creating scarcity by gathering more lemons than needed.

September: The women of St. Helena were forbidden to board visiting ships, except during the hours of daylight and in the company of their husbands.
February (1680, Old Style): Mr. Greentree and Mr. Colson were suspended from Council of St. Helena after having been noticed to be “most active” during an unlicensed open-air protest meeting.

Edward “It is not to his majesty’s interest that you should thrive” Randolph, British agent, charged Daniel Gookin among others with misdemeanor before the Lords of the Massachusetts Council. Gookin’s response would be to request that a paper in defence of his opinion, which he drew up as his dying testimony, might be lodged with the court.

This agent of the crown would, among other things, file with his masters a report as to the provenance of the race war in which Major Gookin had played such a prominent part:

**Eighth Enquiry.** What hath been the original cause of the present war with the natives. What are the advantages or disadvantages arising thereby and will probably be the End? Various are the reports and conjectures of the causes of the present Indian war. Some impute it to an imprudent zeal in the magistrates of Boston to christianize those heathen before they were civilized and injoying them the strict observation of their lawes, which, to a people so rude and licentious, hath proved even intolerable, and that the more, for that while the magistrates, for their profit, put the lawes severely in execution against the Indians, the people, on the other side, for lucre and gain, entice and provoke the Indians to the breach thereof, especially to drunkenness, to which those people are so generally addicted that they will strip themselves to their skin to have their fill of rum and brandy, the Massachusets having made a law that every Indian drunk should pay 10s. or be whipped, according to the discretion of the magistrate. Many of these poor people willingly offered their backs to the lash to save their money; whereupon, the magistrates finding much trouble and no profit to arise to the government by whipping, did change that punishment into 10 days worke for such as could not or would not pay the fine of 10s. which did highly incense the Indians.

Some believe there have been vagrant and jesuiticall priests, who have made it their businesse, for some yeares past, to go from Sachim to Sachim, to exasperate the Indians against the English and to bring them into a confederracy, and that they were promised supplies from France and other parts to extirpate the English nation out of the continent of America. Others impute the cause to some injuries offered to the Sachim Philip; for he being possessed of a tract of land called Mount Hope, a very fertile, pleasant and rich soyle, some English had a mind to dispossesse him thereof, who never wanting one pretence or other to attain their end, complained of injuries done by Philip and his Indians to their stock and cattle, whereupon Philip was often summoned before the magistrate, sometimes imprisoned, and never released but upon parting with a considerable part of his land.

But the government of the Massachusets (to give it in their own
words) do declare these are the great evills for which God hath
given the heathen commission to rise against the: The woffull
breach of the 5th commandment, in contemp of their authority,
which is a sin highly provoking to the Lord: For men wearing
long hair and periwigs made of women's hair; for women wearing
borders of hair and for cutting, curling and laying out the hair,
and disguising themselves by following strange fashions in their
apparell: For profaneness in the people not frequenting their
meetings, and others going away before the blessing be
pronounced: For suffering the Quakers to live amongst them and
to set up their threshholds by Gods thresholds, contrary to
their old lawes and resolutions.
With many such reasons, but whatever be the cause, the English
have contributed much to their misfortunes, for they first
taught the Indians the use of armes, and admitted them to be
present at all their musters and trainings, and shewed them how
to handle, mend and fix their muskets, and have been furnished
with all sorts of armes by permission of the government, so that
the Indians are become excellent firemen. And at Natick there
was a gathered church of praying Indians, who were exercised as
trained bands, under officers of their owne; these have been the
most barbarous and cruel enemies to the English of any others.
Capt. Tom, their leader, being lately taken and hanged at
Boston, with one other of their chiefs.
That notwithstanding the ancient law of the country, made in the
year 1633, that no person should sell any armes or ammunition
to any Indian upon penalty of £10 for every gun, £5 for a pound
of powder, and 40s. for a pound of shot, yet the government of
the Massachusets in the year 1657, upon designe to monopolize
the whole Indian trade did publish and declare that the trade
of furrs and peltry with the Indians in their jurisdiction did
solely and properly belong to their commonwealth and not to
every indifferent person, and did enact that no person should
trade with the Indians for any sort of peltry, except such as
were authorized by that court, under the penalty of £100 for
every offence, giving liberty to all such as should have licence
from them to sell, unto any Indian, guns, swords, powder and
shot, paying to the treasurer 3d. for each gun and for each dozen
of swords; 6d. for a pound of powder and for every ten pounds
of shot, by which means the Indians have been abundantly
furnished with great store of armes and ammunition to the utter
ruin and undoing of many families in the neighbouring colonies
to enrich some few of their relations and church members.
No advantage but many disadvantages have arisen to the English
by the war, for about 600 men have been slain, and 12 captains,
most of them brave and stout persons and of loyal principles,
whilest the church members had liberty to stay at home and not
hazard their persons in the wildernesse.
The losse to the English in the severall colonies, in their
habitations and stock, is reckoned to amount to £150,000 there
having been about 1200 houses burned, 8000 head of cattle, great
and small, killed, and many thousand bushels of wheat, peas and
other grain burned (of which the Massachusets colony hath not
been damnifyed one third part, the great losse falling upon New
Plymouth and Connecticut colonies) and upward of 3000 Indians
men women and children destroyed, who if well managed would have
been very serviceable to the English, which makes all manner of labour dear.

The war at present is near an end. In Plymouth colony the Indians surrender themselves to Gov. Winslow, upon mercy, and bring in all their armes, are wholly at his disposall, except life and transportation; but for all such as have been notoriously cruell to women and children, so soon as discovered they are to be executed in the sight of their fellow Indians.

The government of Boston have concluded a peace upon these terms.

1. That there be henceforward a firme peace between the Indians and English.
2. That after publication of the articles of peace by the generall court, if any English shall willfully kill an Indian, upon due proof, he shall dye, and if an Indian kill an Englishman and escape, the Indians are to produce him, and lie to passe tryall by the English lawes.

That the Indians shall not conceal any known enemies to the English, but shall discover them and bring them to the English. That upon all occasions the Indians are to aid and assist the English against their enemies, and to be under English command. That all Indians have liberty to sit down at their former habitations without let....

“KING PHILLIP’S WAR”

March: Ordered by the British East India Company to help with St. Helena’s fortifications, 66 free planters turned in bills for work performed. The governor averred that their claims were unreasonable and eventually would disburse only 30% of the amount billed.
Nehemiah Grew, a London physician, inferred on purely theoretical grounds that since animals reproduce in a sexual manner, plants must also.

The Laws and Constitution for the island of St. Helena were reaffirmed by the East India Company in London as “agreeable to the nature of the people and not contrary to the laws and statutes of the Kingdom of England.”

March: A seaman, left behind at St. Helena to recover from illness, was found to be skilled in mathematics, navigation, and other sciences. He was allowed the privileges of a free planter but, after being uncivil to the governor, would be deported.
On the island of Jamaica in the Caribbean, a conspiracy to create servile insurrection was detected and promptly exterminated.

The East India Company instructed its governor on St. Helena, John Blackmore, to prepare a Court of Judicature. The disused Market Place near Fort James was convenient for this. Mr. John Sich, a free planter, became the island’s initial sheriff and Mr. Thomas Bolton, also a free planter, became its initial Clerk of the Peace. The Company specified:

That a Prison or Place for securing safely all offenders against the Law and Good Governt to be appointed and made in some convenient place in Fort James; The Soldjers distinct and separate from the Freeplanters and that a carefull Marshall or Prison Keeper be appointed wth such moderate fees as in such cases are usuall.

May 23, Wednesday (Old Style): John Evelyn’s diary entry for this day was in part as follows:

To Lon: R[oyal] Society when Mr. Baker⁶ (a most ingenious young man) that had ben at St. Helenas, shewed us some Experiments of the Variation of the Needles plac’d betweene t[w]o equal Magnets, and Dr. Tyson brought in the Anatomie of a greene Lizard: I return’d that Evening.

August Joseph Trapp was granted land near Lemon Valley on St. Helena, land now known as Trapp Cott.

⁶. Evelyn’s error for Edmond Halley.
April: The Court of Directors of the British East India Company, in one of their regular communications to St. Helena’s governor, expressed hope that his plans for a sugar plantation were well under way, suggested ways to collect sea salt for the preservation of meat and fish, and proposed the growing of rice on the high ground to supplement the diet of the colonists.

July: Gabriel Powell was fined £15 and his remaining cattle in Powell Valley on St. Helena were forfeit, for selling cows to “an interloper” (to wit, some pirate or privateer or freebooter, or one or another vessel that lacked a British East India Company sanction). This Powell family would become one of the biggest landowners on the island, and a son would be acting governor before being deported for swindling the East India Company.

October 21, Tuesday (Old Style): On St. Helena, the soldier Adam Dennison had been imprisoned for having quoted the Deputy-Governor, Captain Robert Holden, to the effect that the primary allegiance of the people of island needed to be to the East India Company rather than the British Crown. Several planters and soldiers marched on the fort to free him, but the guards opened fire and 3 were killed and 14 wounded. Four of these marchers would be hanged as mutineers and some few, in accordance with a long-standing policy of never housing local prisoners locally, banished to the island of Barbados. A court martial in the following year would produce hanging or transportation for an additional five.

November: Since the “planters were inclinable to be mutinous,” the East India Company instructed ship captains to linger up to a month in James Bay at St. Helena, to provide assistance in keeping order ashore as required.

December 23, Tuesday-24, Wednesday (Old Style): There was a court martial on St. Helena, by six members of the island’s garrison and Captain James Marriner and five officers of the Royal James. William Bowyer and 4 others were found guilty and condemned to death and Bowyer would be hanged while the others would wind up being instead transported to Barbados. The wife of one of the rebellious planters, Mrs. Martha Bolton, for having called Deputy-Governor Robert Holden a bad name, would receive 21 lashes and be ducked 3 times in the sea.}

7. What’s new about waterboarding is the suggestion that it can be used as a way to gather information, rather than merely a convenient and effective technique of abuse or punishment by torture. The idea, sponsored by President George W. Bush, that it is a prompt and efficient way to collect reliable information, was recognized all along as a fantasy by the CIA, a government agency that knew very well that “information” collected in such a manner was bound to be unreliable — because a prisoner being tortured will almost always tell the torturer whatever it is that he imagines the torturer wants to hear.
January 31, Saturday (1684, Old Style): On St. Helena, William Bowyer was hanged.
January: Richard Hancock, one of the leaders in the attempted seizure of Fort James on St. Helena, had for 22 months hidden in remote districts of the island. At this point he was captured.
January: On St. Helena, as you may imagine, there were always a variety of currencies in circulation. There were as well weighed and stamped copper bars in circulation, although the heft of these rendered them unpopular. In this month, therefore, it became a criminal offence to refuse to accept such coppers for up to half the value of a purchase.

November: A St. Helena slave named Peter was burned alive in the presence of the other slaves, for poisoning his master — each other slave having been obliged to fetch some of the kindling.

When Royal Governor Sir Edmund Andros returned from Connecticut to Rhode Island, Friend Walter Clarke received him with courtesy and turned the seal of the colony over to him to be destroyed — but he had sent the colony’s charter document to his brother asking that it be concealed in some locale unknown to himself.
January: On St. Helena, John Knipe complained that Bridget Coales, who had promised to marry him, had not only broken off her engagement but had sat in the lap of the butcher of the Modena. When challenged about this conduct she characterized John as “an old dog of her father’s.” Bridget was ordered to pay damages in the amount of £15.

December: 1689 In November 1687 a St. Helena slave, Peter, who had poisoned his master, had been burned alive in the presence of all other slaves, each required to bring some of the kindling. The ceremony had apparently been less than totally effective for at this point it needed to be repeated in regard to a couple of additional slaves, Job and Derrick.8

Captain William Kidd’s Blessed William joined a Royal Navy squadron headed by Captain Thomas Hewetson to attack the French sugar plantation at Mariegalante in the Caribbean. The town was ransacked and Kidd was able to sail away with some £2,000 worth of booty stowed in his privateer vessel’s hold. Hewetson, writing of this in his journal, had it that Kidd “was a mighty man who fought as well as any man I ever saw.”

Shortly afterward the Blessed William joined another English squadron, intending to engage French warships at sea. Captain William Kidd’s crew refused, as in such an activity there would not be a whole lot of looting and pillaging, and Kidd went ashore on Nevis. In the middle of the night Robert Culliford led the crew to sail the vessel away, with Kidd’s lion’s share of the booty still in its hold. Although the governor of Nevis equipped Kidd with the sloop Antigua and a crew to seek out and recover the Blessed William, the effort would evidently prove unsuccessful.

8. There is also a record of a black slave who attempted to kill his master by putting ground glass on his supper. The sentence in this case was the same, being burned alive with wood supplied by other slaves, so I don’t know whether this is a 4th instance, or merely an additional report of the punishment of Peter, or Job, or Derrick.
To come into this Country, you should embark at London, whence a Ship sails every alternate Month. The fittest Season to embark is the End of March; or, the End of August and Beginning of September are the true Seasons, more especially because it is neither too warm nor too cold, and you are then no longer in the Season of the Calms, which are frequent in Summer, and which cause Vessels to spend four Months passing thence. Beyond the Fact that the Heats often occasion Sickness on board, there are no Fatigues to undergo, when one has by him good Store of Refreshments and of all Kinds. It is well, too, to have a Surgeon on the Ship on which you take Passage, as we had on ours. In Regard to the Dangers, Care must be taken to embark on a good Vessel, equipped with an ample Crew and with Cannon, and well provided with Victual, above all, that Bread and Water are not lacking. As for the Route, I have said sufficient above; there is no Danger except in nearing the Land, and on the Banks of Sand found on the Way. We took Soundings in two Places off Cape Sable, which is near Port-Royal or Acadia, where we found ninety Fathoms. At that Time we were only twenty Leagues from Land; we stood off, and came upon St. George’s Bank, which is eighty Leagues from Boston, and there found one hundred Fathoms. From that Point, we took no more Soundings, for three Days after we sighted Cape Coot, which is twenty Leagues from Boston towards the South, and on the Morrow we arrived at Boston, after having fallen in with a Number of very pretty Islands that lie in Front of Boston, most of them cultivated and inhabited by Peasants, which form a very fine View. Boston is situated at the Head of a Bay possibly three or four Leagues in Circumference, shut in by the Islands of which I have told you. Whatever may be the Weather, Vessels lie there in Safety. The Town is built on the Slope of a little Hill, and is as large as La Rochelle. The Town and the Land outside are not more than three Miles in Circuit, for it is almost an Island; it would only be necessary to cut through a Width of three hundred Paces, all Sand, which in less than twice twenty-four Hours would make Boston an Island washed on all Sides by the Sea. The Town is almost wholly built of wooden Houses; but since there have been some ravages by Fire, building of Wood is no longer allowed, so that at this present writing very handsome Houses of Brick are going up. I ought to have told you, at the Beginning of this Article, that you pay in London for Passage here twenty Crowns and twenty-four if you prefer to pay in Boston, so that it is better to pay here than in London; you have one Crown over, since one hundred Pounds at London, are equal to one hundred and twenty-five here, so that the twenty Crowns one must pay at London are twenty-five Crowns here, by reason of the twenty-five per cent., and twenty-four is all one has to pay here; this Increase in the Value of Money is a great Help to the poor Refugees, should they bring any....
There is here no Religion other than the Presbyterian, the Anglican, Anabaptist, and our own. We have not any Papists, at least that are known to us....

In Regard to acquiring Land, that which is taken up in the Noraganzet Country costs twenty Pounds sterling per hundred Acres Cash down, and twenty-five on Time, for three Years; but Payment is not made because it is not known whether that Country will remain in the Hands of the Proprietors, wrongly thus called, or belong to the King. Until this Matter be decided, no Payment will be made; in all Cases one cannot be obliged to pay more than the Price above mentioned, and in accordance with the Terms of Contract approved before the Town-mayors. We are even assured that if the King holds the Land, the Price will be Nothing, or at least very little, the Crown contenting itself with a small seignorial reservation, so that one can sell and let, the Property being one’s own. The Nicmock Country is the private Property of the President, and Land there costs Nothing. I do not yet know the Quantity they give to each Family; some Persons have told me, from fifty to one hundred [Acres], according to Families.... It rests with those who wish to take up Land to take it in one of the two Countries on the Seashore, or in the Interior. The Nicmock Country is in the Interior, and twenty Leagues from Boston, and an equal Distance from the Sea, so that, when they wish to send or receive Anything from Boston, it must be carted. There are little Rivers and Ponds around this Settlement, fruitful in Fish, and Woods full of Game. M. Bondet is their Minister. The Inhabitants are as yet only fifty-two Persons. The Noraganzet Country is four Miles from the Sea, and consequently it has more Commerce with the Sea Islands, as Boston [two words illegible], and the Island of Rodislan, which is only ten Miles away. This Island, they tell me, is well-settled, and with a great Trade, which I know of my own Knowledge. There are at Noraganzet about one hundred Persons; M. Carré is their Minister.

... You can bring with you hired Help in any Vocation whatever; there is an absolute Need of them to till the Land. You may also own Negroes and Negresses; there is not a House in Boston, however small may be its Means, that has not one or two. There are those that have five or six, and all make a good Living. You employ Savages to work your Fields, in Consideration of one Shilling and a half a Day and Board, which is eighteen Pence; it being always understood that you must provide them with Beasts or Utensils for Labor.
This Town carries on a great Trade with the Islands of America and with Spain. They carry to the Islands Flour, Salt Beef, Salt Pork, Cod, Staves, Salt Salmon, Salt Mackerel, Onions, and Oysters salted in Barrels, great Quantities of which are taken here; and for their Return they bring Sugar, Cotton Wool, Molasses, Indigo, Sago and Pieces of [illegible]. In the trade with Spain, they carry only dried Fish, which is to be had here at eight to twelve Shillings the Quintal, according to Quality; the Return Cargo is in Oils, Wine and Brandy, and other Merchandise which comes by Way of London, for Nothing can be imported here, coming from a foreign Port, unless it has first been to London and paid the half Duty, after which it can be transported here, where for all Duty one-half per cent is paid for Importation, since Merchandise for Exportation pays Nothing at all.

... You must disabuse yourself of the Impression that Advantages are here offered to Refugees. It is true that in the Beginning some Subsistence was furnished them, but at Present there is a Need of some for those who shall bring Nothing. At Nicmock, as I have before said, Land is given for Nothing, and at Noraganzet it must be bought at twenty to twenty-five Pounds Sterling the Hundred Acres, so that whoever brings Nothing here, finds Nothing. It is very true that Living is exceedingly cheap, and that with a little one can make a good Settlement. A family of three or four Persons can make with fifty Pistoles a fine Settlement; but it needs not less than that. Those who bring much, do well in Proportion.

... One can come to this Country, and return the same as in Europe. There is the greatest Liberty, and you may live without any Constraint. Those who desire to come into this Country, should get themselves naturalized ([fridanniser]) in London in order to be free to carry on Business in any sort of Merchandise, and to trade with the English Islands, without which they cannot do so.

[Subsequent letter report:] ... I forgot to tell you that there is here [Noraganzet] a Temple of Anabaptists, for as to the other Sects of which I spoke in my Report concerning Noraganzet, it is only for that Country and not for Boston, for we have here no religions other than the Anglican, the Presbyterian, the Anabaptists and our own [Huguenot]. As for Papists, I have discovered since being here eight or ten, three of whom are French and come to our Church, and the others are Irish; with the Exception of the Surgeon who has a Family, the others are here only in Passage.
It is better to have hired Men to till your Land. Negroes cost from twenty to forty Pistoles, according as they are skilful or robust; there is no Danger that they will leave you, nor hired Help likewise, for the Moment one is missing from the Town, you have only to notify the Savages, who, provided you promise them something, and describe the Man to them, he is right soon found. But it happens rarely that they quit you, for they would know not where to go, there being few trodden roads, and those which are trodden lead to English Towns or Villages, which, on your writing, will immediately send back your Men. There are Ship-captains who might take them off; but that is open Larceny and would be rigorously punished. Houses of Brick and Frame can be built cheaply, as regards Materials, but the Labor of Workmen is very dear; a Man cannot be got to work for less than twenty-four Pence a Day and found.

... Pasturage abounds here. You can raise every Kind of Cattle, which thrive well. An Ox costs from twelve to fifteen Crowns; a Cow, eight to ten; Horses, from ten to fifty Crowns, and in Plenty. There are even wild ones in the Woods, which are yours, if you can catch them. Foals are sometimes caught. Beef costs two Pence the Pound; Mutton, two Pence; Pork from two to three Pence, according to the Season; Flour fourteen Shillings the one hundred and twelve Pound, all bolted; Fish is very cheap, and Vegetables also; Cabbage, Turnips, Onions and Carrots abound here. Moreover, there are Quantities of Nuts, Chestnuts and Hazelnuts wild. These Nuts are small, but of wonderful Flavor. I have been told that there are other Sorts which we shall see in the Season. I am assured that the Woods are full of Strawberries in their Season. I have seen Quantities of wild Grapevine, and eaten Grapes of very good Flavor, kept by one of my Friends. There is no Doubt that the Vine will do very well; there is some little planted in the Country, which has grown. There is Difficulty in getting the European Vine. If some little could be had, much more would be planted. Those who mean to come over thence, should strive to bring with them of the best.

... The Rivers are full of Fish, and we have so great a Quantity of Sea and River Fish that no Account is made of them. There are here Craftsmen of every Kind, and particularly Carpenters for the building of Ships. The Day after my Arrival, I saw them put into the Water one of three hundred Tons, and since, they have launched two others somewhat smaller.
January: Samuel Watts was tried as a pirate in Boston.

Matthew Pouncey, one of the St. Helena planters involved in the 1684 rebellion, offered his land to the government and escaped the death sentence, and was permitted to board ship for Bombay.

February: In Boston, as part of an effort to fund a military expedition against Canada – one that would fail – the 1st paper money in the history of North America was issued.

A couple of men visiting St. Helena were noted to have a quantity of gold in their possession, and interrogated. When they admitted having been pirates and offered that they were attempting to retire, they were dispatched to a prison in England.

March: Jack, son of Black Oliver, found himself charged with an offence for which there was an absence of evidence. When a jury found him not guilty, the St. Helena authorities had him flogged before his release.

June: On St. Helena, 10 of the “most lazy and weakly of the East India Company’s slaves,” ranging from 8 years to 27 years of age, were sold for prices ranging from £8 to £27.

December 2, Tuesday (Old Style): Governor Major John Blackmore, returning from a journey into the interior of St. Helena, lost his footing near Putty Hill and plunged to his death. His position as governor was assumed by Captain Joshua Johnson.
June 20, Saturday (Old Style): The Defence arrived at St. Helena with William Dampier. He would form an impression that the island outpost could never become self-supporting.

October: In an attempt to lift the spirits of its island possession, the East India Company was vending arrack, locally distilled from potatoes, at St. Helena Plantation.
July 25, Monday (Old Style): On St. Helena, several slaves were suspected of killing a cow. One was told he would be flogged until he made a “true” confession, and did “confess” after tied to the flagpole and given several lashes — but upon recovering he retracted that confession. Other suspects were than flogged, and nooses placed around their necks, but to no avail.

September: At this point the lookout position at Matts Mount, where the flagstaff was positioned, was abandoned because fog and haze there so frequently made it difficult to sight unidentified ships. Henceforth, alarm guns positioned at Prosperous Bay would alert St. Helena to the approach of unidentified ships.
Governor Captain Joshua Johnson, to prevent desertion by soldiers smuggling themselves aboard departing ships, would allow ships to weigh anchor and exit the harbor only during the hours of daylight. This led to a mutiny, the “Jackson Conspiracy,” in which 27 soldiers under Henry Jackson seized the fort of St. Helena (happening to kill Governor Johnson in the process) and then escaped from the island on the East India Company ship Francis and Mary.

January 2, Monday (1692, Old Style): A slave of St. Helena Deputy-Governor Captain Richard Kelinge was burned to death for sorcery.

April 21, Friday (Old Style): Upon the killing of Governor Captain Joshua Johnson in a mutinous assault on the fort of St. Helena, Deputy-Governor Captain Richard Kelinge took over as Governor.

May 4, Thursday (Old Style): On St. Helena, no executioner being available to carry out the sentence on three mutineers, Joseph Davis, judged the least culpable, was spared on condition that he execute the other two, George Lock and Isaac Slaughter.

July 4, Tuesday (Old Style): William Birch died as the result of a fall while herding goats on White Hill, St. Helena. The locale of the fall is still referred to as “Billy Birch.”
Edmond Halley’s observations on the hydrological cycle, made in 1676 on St. Helena, were finally published. (It is to be noted that this concept of recirculating fluid had quite possibly been inspired by William Harvey’s 1630s discovery of the recirculation of the body’s blood. We were on our way toward a new formal science in which we would not only be able to think of the planet’s surface phenomena as constituting a single self-regulating system, but also toward an abstract science of the cybernetics of self-regulating systems, neither of which had been latent within earlier patterns of thought.)
November: Sandy Bay on St. Helena was fortified with two cannon to deter attempts to sneak onto the island (leaving aside for a moment the poser, of why anyone would ever design to sneak onto such an island).
December: We can safely infer that Mary Tewsdale was suspected of witchcraft, for when her corpse washed up at Sandy Bay Beach on St. Helena and they buried it at Half Way Tree, the corpse had a stake driven through its torso and they covered the gravesite with stones.

Here is an entry in the diary of John Evelyn:

There hapning so swiftly an exceeding fierce frost after greate raines, & grew so very cold, that we had the office of the day at home: ...
November 30, Tuesday (Old Style): When Captain Richard Kelinge died in office on St. Helena, Mrs. Kelinge, as she departed the Governor’s residence, took with her most of its plate and pewter, and within a couple of months would be remarried, with George Carne. Captain Stephen Poirier took over as governor.
Transported convicts were being sold in Monserrat for a fixed price of 2,500 pounds of sugar “per servant, male or female.”

The prison on St. Helena had a noisome hole beneath it as capable of stifling a man as the Black Hole of Calcutta, and maximum security prisoners held in this dungeon were normally kept in irons chained to ring bolts — it was just like the cartoons you’ve seen.

The Portuguese were expelled from Mombasa on the eastern coast of the African continent.

July: The records of St. Helena listed 71 planters with a total of 92 slaves, plus 23 government position-holders (this list was not comprehensive as, you will notice, it mentions no soldiers, no government slaves, etc.).

October: 50 years earlier, Peter Mundy on his 2d of 3 visits to St. Helena had described the cattle as in perfect condition, and lemon trees as bending under the burden of their fruit. The population of wild goats had however at this point increased to the extent that cattle could not survive (the mouths of sheep and goats nibble grass flush with the ground, leaving nothing whatever for cattle). Hunting parties were organized for every Wednesday, to decimate the goats.
January: Water was scarce on St. Helena, there having been a long drought (further severe water shortages would occur in 1724 and 1738).

February: When 20 pirates pardoned by King William III of England arrived at St. Helena, 4 were allowed to remain because of an expectation of “considerable profit to the inhabitants.”
April: The Board of Trade recommended to King William III of England that he should instruct his law officers to draft a better form of government for the colony of Rhode Island — one under which it would no longer be able to make of itself a safe haven for malfactors in order to live off the proceeds of piracy.

On St. Helena punishment for runaway slaves was to be:

- 1st offence: an iron collar for a year
- 2d offence: little finger cut off
- 3d offence: next finger cut off
- 4th offence: for a man, cut off the testicles, for a women, cut off the ears
William Dampier completed his circumnavigation of the globe (paying a return visit to St. Helena, this time in the Roebuck).

January: Many St. Helena trees had been destroyed to distil potatoes for arrack, which wasn’t all that good for you although it did help somewhat to mitigate the loneliness and interminable boredom of existence on a remote little company island. Turning a bad thing into a good thing, the East India Company instituted a local tax on firewood.

August 1, Monday (Old Style): A great flood on St. Helena washed away several houses, temporarily easing the island’s boredom. Later in the month, to curb drunkeness, Governor Captain Stephen Poirier imposed a 10PM curfew.
October 6, Friday (Old Style): A former slave named Jack, and two slaves, were apprehended for breaking into the Luffkin house to steal arrack. The jury of St. Helena citizens would hang the slaves but allow Jack to remain alive while remanding him to slavery.
May 8, day (Old Style): For burglary on St. Helena, Button and Scriven were flogged on the pillory on three successive days and then transported to Borneo for five years (because the East India Company needed laborers to strengthen its fortifications there).
June 1, Saturday (Old Style): Two ships of the East India Company, the *Queen* and the *Dover*, were taken as they lay at anchor in the roads of St. Helena by two large ships firing cannonballs weighing 24 pounds and 32 pounds. The privateers had approached flying Dutch colors but afterward began to display French colors.

July 13, Saturday (Old Style): The East India Company on St. Helena decided it was going to need a moat in front of its Castle and Grand Parade.

July 30, Tuesday (Old Style): On St. Helena, Thomas Swallow had beaten his apprentice boy and threatened that he would hang him up by his heels and make a smoke under his nose and head the way the boy knew he had previously tortured “his black wench.” (Swallow was accused of cruelty, although we are not sure whether this charge of cruelty was on account of the way he had tortured his slave, or the way he had beaten and threatened his apprentice, or perhaps both.)

August: The plunder of the pirate Thomas White included several Indian ships, a Portuguese merchantman, and, at this point, two British ships. There being honor among such thieves, when the booty was distributed his crewmen received about £1,200 each.

Further flooding brought damage to the fortifications at Rupert’s Valley in St. Helena.
April:  Henry Francis took possession of two acres of land on Water Fall Plain in St. Helena, previously owned by his late father-in-law.


September 3, Wednesday (Old Style): Captain Stephen Poirier left office, but would not be replaced as governor of St. Helena by Captain John Roberts until August 24, 1708.

November: On St. Helena, George Carne was disputing with Daniel Griffiths. Griffiths considered that Carne was favored on account of being a Roman Catholic and suspected that he himself was out of favor because he had been a close friend of the late Governor Richard Kelinge. This would continue for at least 8 years.

December: Because the East India Company has large herds on St. Helena and plenty to spare, civilians were forbidden to sell meat to the passing ships.
Following commercial rivalries between the original English East India Company and a New East India Company created in 1698, an amalgamation of the two was created, and named “United Company of Merchants of England Trading to the East Indies.” St. Helena was then transferred from the one to the other as the United East India Company became Lords Proprietors of the island.

February: Captain Edward Mashborne discovered what appeared to him to be small amounts of gold in the limestone dug from Breakneck Valley of St. Helena, after firing it in a kiln (in England they would quickly determine his sample to consist of mere iron pyrites coated with his wishfulness).

To generate revenue for the government, Rhode Island enacted a £3 customs duty.


August: There was a perceived urgent need to repair the fortifications of St. Helena. A reward of $100 was offered for quarrying stone to be burned to produce the limiting construction material, lime. The island council approved Governor Captain John Roberts’s agenda for a structure in Jamestown now referred to as “The Castle.”

August 24, Sunday (1707, Old Style): Captain John Roberts became Governor of St. Helena.

September: On St. Helena, a report made of the capture of some “runaway negroes” indicated that they had run away due to “their cruel usage beyond measure.” This would not result in anything being done to protect the slaves from cruelty — the result would be measures for prompter reporting of such runaways.

French privateers captured two vessels off Martha’s Vineyard. Major William Wanton and Captain John Cranston sailed in pursuit, and in a 24-hour chase the privateers escaped without their prizes, which they scuttled.
Governor Captain John Roberts, who had arrived on St. Helena the previous year, found in the local ledgers of the East India Company many obsolete laws and antiquated orders. His revised laws would confirm trial by jury and enclosure of the land. One of this Governor’s chief ambitions would be to persuade landholders to fence their pastures and enclose their sheep, goats, and cattle — crops were being ruined and trees destroyed by wandering herds of livestock.

February 22, Tuesday (1708, Old Style): We now understand that since St. Helena is an island of volcanic origin, nobody’s ever going to discover anything in the ground of any economic value. In the early years, however, there had been all sorts of idle fantasies, especially after Captain Edward Mashborne, a member of the Council, had claimed that while searching in Breakneck Valley for limestone, he have seen gold and silver ore deposits:

A Declaration by the Governor and Council
For the encouragement of any person that shall be industrious towards finding a mine (of Gold or Copper) he shall have as a reward for his trouble, two hundred and fifty pounds for the gold and one hundred and fifty pounds for the copper mine; and this rainy season being the most proper time for looking into all the water-falls and streams, we desire that they may apply themselves diligently thereabouts, being assured there are such mines upon the island.

When the Captain’s sample had been assayed in England, it had been discovered of course to amount to iron pyrites coated with his wishfulness. Useable limestone would eventually be discovered near Sandy Bay but metal ore deposits none whatever.

July: On St. Helena a decision was reached to erect a barracks alongside the Castle in Jamestown.
March: It was noted that of the “Great Wood” that had extended from Deadwood Plain to Prosperous Bay Plain on St. Helena, not a single tree remained in existence. A law was created to encourage the planting of trees. They were fearful that their island would be denuded within a couple of decades if this planting was unsuccessful (meanwhile Governor Captain John Roberts was scheming to “improve” this district through flooding, or perhaps irrigation).

August: The governor and council decide to send the directors of the East India Company a sample of the first St. Helena sugar to be produced. At the same time the directors were informed that since the arrival of Governor Captain John Roberts, lime, tiles, bricks, cut stones, rum and several kinds of minerals were being produced.
January: On St. Helena Governor Captan John Roberts had one hell of a great idea — all they needed to do was divert water from Plantation Valley onto the 200 acres of Prosperous Bay Plain — sugar cane and yams would double the island’s crop production!9

April: On St. Helena Governor Captan John Roberts had another hell of a great idea — raise 150 to 200 pigs in an enclosure — enclosed pigs would taste better than the free-ranging ones of the East India Company. (In London the Court of Directors was replacing Governor Roberts with Captain Benjamin Boucher.)10

July: The East India Company swapped its land at Sandy Bay on St. Helena with Thomas Cason, for his land between Plantation House and High Peak.

In this month and the following one the New York assembly strengthened its previous act placing a duty on the tonnage of vessels and slaves.


9. This was before Environmental Impact Reports.
10. This was before Environmental Impact Reports.
August 7, Tuesday (Old Style): Captain John Roberts found out he had been replaced as governor of St. Helena by Captain Benjamin Boucher. (The new Governor would ride asses for amusement, and erect a 400-foot shed built so he could exercise while it rained.)

November: Yes, there was hope for the hopeless — 3 St. Helenians in a long boat escaped from their island with a month’s provisions (it would later be verified that rather than perishing at sea, they managed to arrive at the West Indies).

11. The following is a summary of the legislation of the colony of New York; details will be found in W.E. Burghardt Du Bois: —
1709, Duty Act: £3 on Negroes not direct from Africa (Continued by the Acts of 1710, 1711).
1711, Bill to lay further duty, lost in Council.
1716, Duty Act: 5 oz. plate on Africans in colony ships. 10 oz. plate on Africans in other ships.
1728, Duty Act: 40s. on Africans, £4 on colonial Negroes.
1732, Duty Act: 40s. on Africans, £4 on colonial Negroes.
1734, Duty Act: (?)
1753, Duty Act: 40s. on Africans, £4 on colonial Negroes. (This act was annually continued.)
[1777, Vermont Constitution does not recognize slavery.]
1785, Sale of slaves in State prohibited.
[1786, Sale of slaves in Vermont prohibited.]
1788, Sale of slaves in State prohibited.
January: On St. Helena it was decided to create a gigantic limekiln at Sandy Bay, where the best limestone was to be found. The kiln would be fired with 1,000 bushels of wood at a time.

September: Governor of St. Helena Captain Benjamin Boucher was in poor health.
April: St. Helena’s remaining trees were the subject of correspondence between the Governor and Council and the Court of Directors. Although the island government did of course recognize that the free-ranging and ubiquitous goats were doing great harm, that didn’t mean they ought to reduce the number of goats or restrict their grazing, did it? Oh, by the way, they needed more drinking glasses.
March: According to an East India Company memo about the situation of their waystation at St. Helena in the mid-Atlantic, “we can’t find that our Gov. Boucher and Council gave any tolerable heed to our instructions or so much as read them with attention.” It’s like this guy is ignoring us.

June: On St. Helena they were experiencing the severest drought so far known, with cattle and crop losses — and a resupply ship that was overdue from England was nowhere to be seen. Is that a sail on the horizon? –no, I guess not.

June 28, Monday (Old Style): On leaving St. Helena due to ill health, Captain Benjamin Boucher stripped the Governor’s official residence of “all that was portable which might have been of service to him including the locks and keys.”

July 8, Thursday (Old Style): Captain Isaac Pyke arrived to take up the vacated office of Governor of St. Helena.

August: Governor Captain Isaac Pyke let it be known that as of a Sunday, he expected to see the face of each and every St. Helenian in the East India Company’s service, who was present in Jamestown on that day — right there with him at worship in that church. We don’t want to get God angry with us.

December: On St. Helena there were a total of 3,089 acres of plantation and pastures in private hands. The top plantation owners were Powell with 255 acres, Doveton with 151 acres, and Carne with 111 acres.
Royal Spanish authorities created a monopoly known as the “Factoría.” This agency was to purchase all Cuban tobacco at fixed prices and vend it abroad.

France took control of Mauritius in the Indian Ocean, renaming it “Isle de France.” Governor Captain Isaac Pyke suggested that St. Helenans abandon their God-forsaken barren island in the middle of the Atlantic and sail off to that island in the Indian Ocean.

January: On St. Helena, 2 men at Horse Pasture clambered down to the seashore of Lemon Valley and took out a boat to attempt to rescue some soldiers whose boat had overturned. They saved 2 but 3 drowned.

August: On St. Helena, when Jepthah Fowler was beaten by his wife and Andrew Berg he lodged an official complaint. Both the wife and the guy who helped her beat him were forced to “ride the wooden horse.” In addition the guy needed to pay a fine and the wife was given “a ducking” (waterboarding, decidedly unpleasant).

October: At this point boats were coming ashore on St. Helena in the vicinity of Thompson’s Crane, despite the fact that 3 men had been killed by rock falls and many injured. Although it would have been better to effect a landing at Downings Cove on the James Bay side of Mundens Point, it would have very costly to extend the wharf that far (this wouldn’t be affordable until 1787).
February: The water was foul during the rainy season and there was a high death rate in the garrison on St. Helena. Lack of sewage control? Cholera? In Batavia, Indonesia the Dutch soldiers were boiling the water and drinking it only as tea, to good effect, so a decision was reached to have the soldiers on this island also drink tea.

May: On St. Helena, men named French and Wrangham figured in reports of fights and arguments.

June: On St. Helena, a bullock killed to supply a vessel was refused by the ship’s captain, who characterized it as carrion. The butcher explained what had happened: his shot hadn’t kill the animal and it galloped away. Dogs had given chase but the bullock made it half a mile, to a spot where there weren’t any trees. Therefore it hadn’t been possible to hang the carcass for draining.

August: Mrs. Snow sailed away from St. Helena with Captain Martin in his ship Queen. Governor Captain Isaac Pyke commented that his island’s moral tone would have been further improved had Jepthah Fowler’s wife—and three other women (naming them, of course)–departed with her.
February: Captain Samuel Bellamy and Captain Palsgrave Williams encountered the Whydah on its voyage from Jamaica bound for London. They chased her for three days in the Windward Passage, and finally she struck her colors. With the capture of the Widow, Captain Samuel Bellamy left his Sultana and took command of his new prize.

On St. Helena, heavy surf smashed a boat with cargo to pieces.

March: On St. Helena, after five days of heavy surf, the crane had been broken and the newly built wharf entirely ruined.

Wrote Isaiah Thomas: “I have been informed that James Franklin served an apprenticeship with a printer in England, where his father was born, and had connections. In March 1716/1717, J. Franklin came from London with a press and types, and began business in Boston.” This may have been inferred by Thomas on the basis of Benjamin Franklin’s personal memoir (now known as his “Autobiography”), in which James “return’d from England with a Press and Letters to set up his Business in Boston.” However, it seems that James actually did not serve his apprenticeship in London itself, for his name is not to be found in D.F. McKenzie’s authoritative STATIONERS’ COMPANY APPRENTICES, 1701-1800 (Oxford: Bibliographical Society, 1978), and in addition there are no surviving James Franklin imprints to be found, from 1717. It has been the suggestion of Lawrence C. Wroth that “he could well have been employed by Benjamin Eliot, the publisher, to make cuts for the books printed for Eliot by Bartholomew Green in 1717 and 1718, and later for those printed for Eliot by Franklin himself in 1719,” but such an employment wouldn’t have amounted to a living. Instead, it seems likely that when James Franklin came back from England he initially engaged himself as a journeyman printer — probably for Bartholomew Green (1666-1732), then Boston’s most prolific printer and a member of the Old South Church. James had in fact known Bartholomew Green all his life. A cancelled reference in Franklin’s holograph suggests that James Franklin needed to borrow money from his father to start his Boston press, and presumably this would indicate that he borrowed this money after returning from England. James Franklin made the relief woodcut of Hugh Peter for A DYING FATHER’S LAST LEGACY TO AN ONLY CHILD: OR, MR. HUGH PETER’S ADVICE TO HIS DAUGHTER (Boston: B. Green for Benjamin Eliot, 1717). Wroth and Adams have written that “the Franklin cuts were made on metal with a graver and not on the long grain, or plank surface, of wood with a knife. Because of the difficulty of being absolutely sure of this fact, we have felt that whatever our own conviction might be, it was better to admit the uncertainty and describe productions of this sort entered in the Catalogue as ‘relief cuts’ rather than be dogmatic and call them ‘metal cuts.’” But in the imprint for A CATALOGUE OF CURIOUS AND VALUABLE BOOKS . . . REVEREND MR. GEORGE CURWIN (Boston: J. Franklin for S. Gerrish, 1718), James Franklin specifically advertised that he did “engraving on wood.” Lawrence C. Wroth also pointed out that the undated broadside Divine Examples of God’s Severe Judgments upon Sabbath Breakers ... Collected out of Several Divine Subjects, Mr. H.B. Mr. Beard, and the Practice of Piety ... Boston in New England: Re-Printed [by B. Green] and Sold in Newbury-Street, which Samuel Abbott Green dated at 1708 simply because that was the when Newbury Street received that name, could also have been printed anytime after 1708 (because in fact Bartholomew Green, printer, continued to be located in Newbury Street). Wroth suggested that James Franklin made the relief cuts and that the work should be dated “about 1718.”

June: When the small pox broke out on St. Helena among slaves brought from Madagascar, they were quarantined in Lemon Valley.
July: Governor Captain Isaac Pyke proposed the creation of a good track from Jamestown through to the east side of the island of St. Helena. The consequence would be known as “Sidepath.”

In absentia, George Berkeley was elected a senior fellow of his college in Dublin.
April 25, Saturday (Old Style): Daniel Defoe’s ROBINSON CRUSOE was published when its author was 60 (on the cigar box below, he’s rather a young-looking 60).

The historical original of the island hermit Robinson Crusoe is alleged to have been Alexander SelCraig, the 7th son of John SelCraig and Euphan Mackie, a sailor who had been born in 1676 in Largo, Scotland. He was sent to sea in 1695, changing his name to Selkirk, and on May 18, 1703 sailed in the Cinque Ports galley, 96 tons, 18 guns, and 63 men, Charles Pickering, Captain; Thomas Stradling, Lieutenant; and himself, Selkirk, Sailing Master. In that year they anchored at La Granda, Brazil, where Captain Pickering died, with the command falling upon Stradling. February of the following year saw them anchor at an uninhabited island off...
the coast of Chile, Juan Fernandez, to take on food and water.

They left in pursuit of a French ship on February 29 but returned in September. During this time Selkirk had frequent quarrels with Stradling and ultimately felt that the ship was not sea-worthy. So when the Cinque Ports departed at the end of the month, all his effects, with additional supplies, were taken on shore and he remained alone on the island. Selkirk was recovered on February 2, 1709 by the Duke and Duchess, under the command of Captain Woodes Rogers. He was taken on as mate of the Duke and they sailed on February 12, arriving at Erith on the Thames, on October 14, 1711. The following year captain Rogers had published an account of his voyages in which he related the finding of Selkirk and how he had lived alone on the island “four years and four months”. Another officer of the same expedition, Captain Edward Cooke, published a similar volume and stated on the title page “Wherein an Account is given of Mr. Alexander Selkirk, his manner of living and taming some wild Beasts during the four Years and four Months he lived upon the uninhabited Island of Juan Fernandez.” After his time on the Duke Selkirk returned to Largo in 1712 and invested the money he had made. In 1717 he went to sea again and became a Lieutenant in the Royal Navy. He died at sea in 1723.

However, writing in the Sunday London Times for April 19, 1998, Christina Lamb reports that:

The long-cherished belief that a Scottish adventurer inspired Robinson Crusoe, the castaway hero of the first great English novel, is under attack. A leading Portuguese historian claims Daniel Defoe stole the character from accounts of a 16th-century traitor from Lisbon who fled to a desert island. British school children are usually taught that Crusoe was based on Alexander Selkirk, who ran away to sea and was stranded on one of the uninhabited Juan Fernandez islands in the Pacific. Selkirk was rescued 10 years before the publication of Defoe’s novel in 1719. According to Fernanda Durao Ferreira, however, Defoe’s novel is strikingly similar to accounts of the life of Fernão Lopez, whose ears, nose, right hand and left thumb were cut off.
after he was accused of treason. He found refuge on St. Helena, in the Atlantic, where he died in 1546. His constant companions, according to 16th-century travelogues, were a Javanese servant, like Man Friday, and a faithful cockerel which followed him everywhere, just as Crusoe’s parrot did.

“I’ve absolutely no doubt that Crusoe was Lopez,” said Ferreira last week. “The structure of the book was Defoe’s but the story
is a complete patchwork of Portuguese travel literature."

Ferreira’s claims are made in a book, THE PORTUGUESE INSPIRATION FOR ROBINSON CRUSOE. It is being published during a drive to emphasize Portugal’s maritime glories in the run-up to Expo, a £2 billion international exhibition in which the focus will be on oceans. The organizers of the event, which opens next month in Lisbon, want to emphasize that Portuguese explorers discovered and mapped two-thirds of the world.... "Portuguese travel literature was very much in vogue at that time, and Defoe was a personal friend of some of the translators," said Ferreira, an expert on the discoveries period. "The more I read and checked, the more I found things in Crusoe which were almost word-for-word copies of Portuguese travelogues of the 15th and 16th centuries."

Defoe’s description of Crusoe’s island matches Portuguese accounts of the island of Goreia, off the coast of Senegal. An episode in which cannibals on Crusoe’s island prepare to eat Spaniards on a ship laden with silver from South America resembles a description by Duarte Pacheco Pereira, a Portuguese writer, of an attack by cannibals on a boat laden with gold.... Ferreira believes Defoe deliberately left clues to Crusoe’s true origin. After escaping from his Moroccan jail, Crusoe is saved by a Portuguese ship. When he reaches Europe, he arrives in Lisbon — and when he tries to salvage belongings from the shipwreck he manages to get "three Bibles and some Portuguese books...."

Nevertheless, the Juan Fernandez group of islands 360 miles from Valparaiso, Chile now bear the names Isla Santa Clara, Isla Alejandro Selkirk, and Isla Robinson Crusoe, and there is a plaque:

12. I have silently corrected Fernão Lopes to Fernão Lopez to avoid confusion with the Portuguese historian Lopes.
IN MEMORY OF
ALEXANDER SELKIRK
MARINER.
A native of LARGO, in the County of FIFE, SCOTLAND,
who lived on this island, in complete Solitude,
For Four years and four months.
He was landed from the Cinque Ports galley, 96 tons,
18 guns, A.D. 1704, and was taken off in the
Duke, privateer, 12th. February, 1709.
He died Lieutenant of H.M.S. Weymouth,
A.D. 1723, aged 47 years.
This tablet is erected near Selkirk’s lookout,
By COMMODORE POWELL, and his OFFICERS
of H.M.S. “TOPAZE”, A.D. 1868.

Not only have we been supposing that Defoe based his story of the castaway Crusoe on Selkirk, when we do not have evidence that that was the case and when it might well be otherwise, but also, we have been supposing that Henry Thoreau read Defoe’s story of the castaway Crusoe, when we do not have evidence that that was the case and when it might well be otherwise. For we do not actually know that Thoreau ever perused a printed edition of this story, and we do know that Thoreau studied a volume about the author Defoe, to wit the 1st of the three volumes of Walter Wilson, Esq.’s MEMOIRS OF THE LIFE AND TIMES OF DANIEL DE FOE: CONTAINING A REVIEW OF HIS WRITINGS, AND HIS OPINIONS UPON A VARIETY OF IMPORTANT MATTERS, CIVIL AND ECCLESIASTICAL (London: Hurst, Chance, and Co., 1830), and we do know that all the details of the story of which Thoreau was aware, were present in that volume.

May: On St. Helena, Parson Jones had been neglecting his duties in regard to funerals, so Governor Captain Isaac Pyke ordered no contributions would be made without his signature.

June: On St. Helena, Mr. Tovey had a swollen eye and he reported that Parson Jones had struck him during an argument (Parson Jones acknowledged this).
June 13, Saturday (Old Style): Captain Isaac Pyke was succeeded as governor of St. Helena by Edward Johnson (Captain Pyke would return as Governor in 1731).

November: The new governor of St. Helena, Edward Johnson, reprimanded the parson, Mr. Jones for insolence and stopped his gratuity.
September: On St. Helena, a man who had committed three burglaries was sentenced to be hanged by his accomplices (who were also found guilty but to a lesser degree).

October: On St. Helena, Governor Edward Johnson had several times warned Mr. Van Oosten about “keeping the company” of Mercy, pointing out that her husband Jacob was already suspected of having cut the throat of a Smitherman for being “too familiar” with her. These warnings having been to no avail, he ordered that Mr. Van Oosten and Mercy be flogged with 21 lashes — the strokes to be administered alternately.
February 16, Friday (1722, Old Style): On St. Helena, Governor Edward Johnson died of the “bloody flux.” He had been the subject of a “scandalous libel fixt up in the valley reflecting on the Gov.” This scandal was blamed on Parson Jones, a known dissident priest.

March: For 4 years on St. Helena the weather had not been “kind.” Although wood had become very scarce, the islanders still needed encouragement to plant trees.

Philip Ashton, a fisherman captured by pirates under Ned Low, managed to get ashore on the island of Roatan in the Bay of Honduras and hide in the dense jungle. He would survive on crabs, fish, and seabird eggs for 16 months, until the Diamond, a ship out of Salem, happened to stop by Roatan for water. He kept a journal of this period of his life.

13. Edward Lowe, Low, or Loe, also known as Ned Low, was a Boston ship rigger who had turned to piracy.

He had a reputation for cruelty and would be described by his own compatriots as a “maniac and a brute.” For instance, upon capturing a Nantucket whaler, he sliced off the vessel’s skipper’s ears, sprinkled them with salt, and forced the man to eat them, before killing him. Then, when he captured the Spanish galleon Monticova, he took it upon himself to personally slaughter, one after another, the vessel’s 53 officers. Before killing one of these Spaniards, he forced him to eat the heart of another. Eventually his own crew had had enough of this and set him adrift without provisions. Two days later, a French ship came across his drifting open boat, and as soon as they had discovered who it was whom they had rescued, they held a short trail at sea and hanged him from their yardarm.
This ferocious villain was born in Westminster, and received an education similar to that of the common people in England. He was by nature a pirate; for even when very young he raised contributions among the boys of Westminster, and if they declined compliance, a battle was the result. When he advanced a step farther in life, he began to exert his ingenuity at low games, and cheating all in his power; and those who pretended to maintain their own right, he was ready to call to the field of combat.

He went to sea in company with his brother, and continued with him for three or four years. Going over to America, he wrought in a rigging-house at Boston for some time. He then came home to see his mother in England, returned to Boston, and continued for some years longer at the same business. But being of a quarrelsome temper, he differed with his master, and went on board a sloop bound for the Bay of Honduras.

While there, he had the command of a boat employed in bringing

---

logwood to the ship. In that boat there were twelve men well armed, to be prepared for the Spaniards, from whom the wood was taken by force. It happened one day that the boat came to the ship just a little before dinner was ready, and Low desired that they might dine before they returned. The captain, however, ordered them a bottle of rum, and requested them to take another trip, as no time was to be lost. The crew were enraged, particularly Low, who took up a loaded musket and fired at the captain, but missing him, another man was shot, and they ran off with the boat. The next day they took a small vessel, went on board her, hoisted a black flag, and declared war with the whole world.

In their rovings, Low met with Lowther, who proposed that he should join him, and thus promote their mutual advantage. Having captured a brigantine, Low, with forty more, went on board her; and leaving Lowther, they went to seek their own fortune.

Their first adventure was the capture of a vessel belonging to Amboy, out of which they took the provisions, and allowed her to proceed. On the same day they took a sloop, plundered her, and permitted her to depart. The sloop went into Black Island, and sent intelligence to the governor that Low was on the coast. Two small vessels were immediately fitted out, but, before their arrival, Low was beyond their reach. After this narrow escape, Low went into port to procure water and fresh provisions; and then renewed his search of plunder. He next sailed into the harbor of Port Rosemary, where were thirteen ships, but none of them of any great strength. Low hoisted the black flag, assuring them that if they made any resistance they should have no quarter; and manning their boat, the pirates took possession of every one of them, which they plundered and converted to their own use. They then put on board a schooner ten guns and fifty men, named her the Fancy, and Low himself went on board of her, while Charles Harris was constituted captain of the brigantine. They also constrained a few of the men to join them, and sign their articles.
After an unsuccessful pursuit of two sloops from Boston, they steered for the Leeward Islands, but in their way were overtaken by a terrible hurricane. The search for plunder gave place to the most vigorous exertion to save themselves. On board the brigantine, all hands were at work both day and night; they were under the necessity of throwing overboard six of her guns, and all the weighty provisions. In the storm, the two vessels were separated, and it was some time before they again saw each other. After the storm, Low went into a small island west of the Carribbees, refitted his vessels, and got provision for them in exchange of goods. As soon as the brigantine was ready for sea, they went on a cruise until the Fancy should be prepared, and during that cruise, met with a vessel which had lost all her masts in the storm, which they plundered of goods to the value of 1000 L. and returned to the island. When the Fancy was ready to sail, a council was held what course they should next steer. They followed the advice of the captain, who thought it not safe to cruise any longer to the leeward, lest they should fall in with any of the men-of-war that cruised upon that coast, so they sailed for the Azores.

The good fortune of Low was now singular; in his way thither he captured a French ship of 34 guns, and carried her along with him. Then entering St. Michael’s roads, he captured seven sail, threatening with instant death all who dared to oppose him. Thus, by inspiring terror, without firing a single gun, he became master of all that property. Being in want of water and fresh provisions, Low sent to the governor demanding a supply, upon condition of releasing the ships he had taken, otherwise he would commit them to the flames. The request was instantly complied with, and six of the vessels were restored. But a French vessel being among them, they emptied her of guns and all her men except the cook, who, they said, being a greasy fellow, would fry well; they accordingly bound the unfortunate man to the mast, and set the ship on fire.

The next who fell in their way was Captain Carter, in the Wright galley; who, because he showed some inclination to defend himself, was cut and mangled in a barbarous manner. There were also two Portuguese friars, whom they tied to the foremast, and several times let them down before they were dead, merely to gratify their own ferocious dispositions. Meanwhile, another Portuguese, beholding this cruel scene, expressed some sorrow in his countenance, upon which one of the wretches said he did not like his looks, and so giving him a stroke across the body with his cutlass, he fell upon the spot. Another of the miscreants, aiming a blow at a prisoner, missed his aim, and struck Low upon the under jaw. The surgeon was called, and stitched up the wound; but Low finding fault with the operation, the surgeon gave him a blow which broke all the stiches, and left him to sew them himself. After he had plundered this vessel, some of them were for burning her, as they had done the Frenchman; but instead of that, they cut her cables, rigging, and sails to pieces, and sent her adrift to the mercy of the waves.

They next sailed for the island of Madeira, and took up a fishing boat with two old men and a boy. They detained one of them, and sent the other on shore with a flag of truce, requesting the
governor to send them a boat of water, else they would hang the
other man at the yard arm. The water was sent, and the man
dismissed.

They next sailed for the Canary Islands, and there took several
vessels; and being informed that two small galleys were daily
expected, the sloop was manned and sent in quest of them. They,
however, missing their prey, and being in great want of
provision, went into St. Michael’s in the character of traders,
and being discovered, were apprehended, and the whole crew
conducted to the castle, and treated according to their merits.
Meanwhile, Low’s ship was overset upon the careen and lost, so
that, having only the Fancy schooner remaining, they all, to the
number of a hundred, went on board her, and set sail in search
of new spoils. They soon met a rich Portuguese vessel, and after
some resistance captured her. Low tortured the men to constrain
them to inform him where they had hid their treasures. He
accordingly discovered that, during the chase, the captain had
hung a bag with eleven thousand moidores out of the cabin window,
and that, when they were taken, he had cut the rope, and allowed
it to fall into the sea. Upon this intelligence, Low raved and
stormed like a fury, ordered the captain’s lips to be cut off
and broiled before his eyes, then murdered him and all his crew.
After this bloody action, the miscreants steered northward, and
in their course seized several vessels, one of which they
burned, and plundering the rest, allowed them to proceed. Having
cleaned in one of the islands, they then sailed for the bay of
Honduras. They met a Spaniard coming out of the bay, which had
captured five Englishmen and a pink, plundered them, and brought
away the masters prisoners. Low hoisted Spanish colors, but,
when he came near, hung out the black flag, and the Spaniard was
seized without resistance. Upon finding the masters of the
English vessels in the hold, and seeing English goods on board,
a consultation was held, when it was determined to put all the
Spaniards to the sword. This was scarcely resolved upon, when
they commenced with every species of weapons to massacre every
man, and some flying from their merciless hands into the waves,
a canoe was sent in pursuit of those who endeavored to swim on
shore. They next plundered the Spanish vessel, restored the
English masters to their respective vessels, and set the
Spaniard on fire.

Low’s next cruise was between the Leeward Islands and the main
land, where, in a continued course of prosperity, he
successively captured no less than nineteen ships of different
sizes, and in general treated their crews with a barbarity
unequalled even among pirates. But it happened that the
Greyhound, of twenty guns and one hundred and twenty men, was
cruising upon that coast. Informed of the mischief these
miscreants had done, the Greyhound went in search of them.
Supposing they had discovered a prize, Low and his crew pursued
them, and the Greyhound, allowing them to run after her until
all things were ready to engage, turned upon the two sloops.
One of these sloops was called the Fancy, and commanded by Low
himself, and the other the Ranger, commanded by Harris; both
hoisted their piratical colors, and fired each a gun. When the
Greyhound came within musket shot, she hauled up her mainsail,
and clapped close upon a wind, to keep the pirates from running
to leeward, and then engaged. But when the rogues found whom they had to deal with, they edged away under the man-of-war’s stern, and the Greyhound standing after them, they made a running fight for about two hours; but little wind happening, the sloops gained from her, by the help of their oars; upon which the Greyhound left off firing, turned all hands to her own oars, and at three in the afternoon came up with them. The pirates hauled upon a wind to receive the man-of-war, and the fight was immediately renewed, with a brisk fire on both sides, till the Ranger’s mainyard was shot down. Under these circumstances, Low abandoned her to the enemy, and fled.

The conduct of Low was surprising in this adventure, because his reputed courage and boldness had hitherto so possessed the minds of all people, that he became a terror even to his own men; but his behaviour throughout this whole action showed him to be a base cowardly villain; for had Low’s sloop fought half so briskly as Harris’ had done (as they were under a solemn oath to do,) the man-of-war, in the opinion of some present, could never have hurt them.

Nothing, however, could lessen the fury, or reform the manners, of that obdurate crew. Their narrow escape had no good effect upon them, and with redoubled violence they renewed their depredations and cruelties. The next vessel they captured, was eighty miles from land. They used the master with the most wanton cruelty, then shot him dead, and forced the crew into the boat with a compass, a little water, and a few biscuits, and left them to the mercy of the waves; they, however, beyond all expectation, got safe to shore.

Low proceeded in his villainous career with too fatal success. Unsatisfied with satiating their avarice and walking the common path of wickedness, those inhuman wretches, like to Satan himself, made mischief their sport, cruelty their delight, and the ruin and murder of their fellow men their constant employment. Of all the piratical crews belonging to the English nation, none ever equalled Low in barbarity. Their mirth and their anger had the same effect. They murdered a man from good humor, as well as from anger and passion. Their ferocious disposition seemed only to delight in cries, groans, and lamentations. One day Low having captured Captain Graves, a Virginia man, took a bowl of punch in his hand, and said, “Captain, here’s half this to you.” The poor gentleman was too much touched with his misfortunes to be in a humor for drinking, he therefore modestly excused himself. Upon this Low cocked and presented a pistol in the one hand, and his bowl in the other, saying, “Either take the one or the other.”

Low next captured a vessel called the Christmas, mounted her with thirty-four guns, went on board her himself, assumed the title of admiral, and hoisted the black flag. His next prize was a brigantine half manned with Portuguese, and half with English. The former he hanged, and the latter he thrust into their boat and dismissed, while he set fire to the vessel. The success of Low was unequalled, as well as his cruelty; and during a long period he continued to pursue his wicked course with impunity. All wickedness comes to an end and Low’s crew at last rose against him and he was thrown into a boat without provisions and abandoned to his fate. This was because Low murdered the
quarter-master while he lay asleep. Not long after he was cast adrift a French vessel happened along and took him into Martinico, and after a quick trial by the authorities he received short shift on a gallows erected for his benefit.

April: On St. Helena, putting a fence around the Great Wood was a sensible idea, except to islanders who pastured their cattle there.

May 28, Tuesday (Old Style): The governor of St. Helena having recently died of the “bloody flux,” Captain John Smith became governor.

November: On St. Helena, Parson Giles had a reputation for drunken and disorderly conduct. Rumor had it that he was imbibing 4 to 6 pints of arrack a day. Islanders were inclined to tolerate this due to “the cloth he wears.”

DRUNKENNESS
There was severe water shortage on St. Helena, before the arrival of terrible rainstorms.

August: Despite the August floods of 1701 and 1706, St. Helenians were pleased that this August brought rains, because they had been fearful that a continuation of drought would have turned their island into a desert.

October: When 3 men were washed from the rocks at Sandy Bay on St. Helena during high winds and stormy seas, one drowned.

15. “St. Helenians” is a neologism used in this database. The inhabitants of the island are known among themselves as “Saints.”
January: Upon revival of the Order of Knights of the Bath by King George I, although the honor of the order’s red ribbon was offered to Lord Stanhope, he declined. (My guess would be that he had been offered only the 3d-class honor of “CB” Companion of the Bath, rather than the 2d-class honor of “KCB” Knight Commander of the Bath or 1st-class honor of “KGC” Knights Grand Cross — and that he considered such a 3d-class honor to be beneath his standing in noble society.)

On St. Helena, Governor Captain John Smith recovered his health only because a passing ship happened to have the right medication.

March: On St. Helena, good rains came at last and the gumwood sprouted on several parts of the island.

May: Philip Ashton arrived home in Marblehead MA, finally safe from the pirates and rescued from the desert isle on which he had been stranded. He brought with him his journal of this period of great excitement in his life, a writing which we still have.

Planters imported furze to St. Helena to mark their boundaries — yet another invasive species to play hell with the native ecology.
February 26, Sunday (1726, Old Style): Captain John Smith was replaced as governor of St. Helena by Edward Byfield. The new governor would be petitioned by the tenant planters to reduce the island’s population of goats, because of damage to their crops.

November: Second edition of Chief Justice Samuel Sewall’s *Phænomena Quædam Apocalyptica ad Aspectum Novi Orbis Configurata; Or, Some Few Lines Towards a Description of the New Heaven as it Makes to Those who Stand upon the New Earth.*

At Flagstaff and Deadwood on St. Helena, several “fine trees” were chopped by trespassers.
November: When Ensign Slaughter was flogged for slandering the governor of St. Helena, the flogging was accomplished with wire whips, and with fishhooks tied to a cane.
January: On St. Helena, despite all their wood collection for the distillation of arrack, and for the fueling of their huge limekiln to enable new construction, there was a petition for the destruction of goats over a 10-year period. They really expected that this alone would be enough to re-establish the island’s long-lost expanses of woodland. Their wishful fantasies would continue.

The Quaker Peace Testimony was not extended in Pennsylvania to the nonprosecution of criminals. Thus, when Friend David Lloyd (1656-1731), an adherent of the testimony, needed to deal with the situation of a burglar who had been sentenced to hang, he was able to write that this man “justly deserves to die ... it may be of ill consequence to spare him.” 16

16. It must be noted that the Quaker case for nonviolence in Pennsylvania was considerably weakened by this support for capital punishment.
March 24, Wednesday (1730, Old Style): On St. Helena, Governor Edward Byfield was replaced by Captain Isaac Pyke (his 2d time as governor of this island), who would report on the destruction of the Great Wood.

April: The brig Rebecca was returning from the West Indies to England when it was stopped on suspicion of smuggling by the Spanish guarda-costa La Isabela. Captain Robert Jenkins was bound to a mast and one of his ears sliced off and handed to him — so he could hand this piece of his flesh to the English king and tell him that the same thing would happen to him if they caught him smuggling.

June 11, Friday (Old Style): Captain Robert Jenkins arrived in England and began to show people his ear that had been severed by the Spaniards. The result, eventually, would be the “War of Jenkins’ Ear” that would go down from 1739 to 1748.
July: A landslip in Lemon Valley on St. Helena disturbed 8 acres of land, 600 yards long and 90 yards deep. The valley’s water altered in color and taste.

December 24, day (Old Style): On St. Helena, heavy rollers destroyed the crane at Lemon Valley. The huge waves carried away at least 27 tons of the island — including some boulders 14 feet long and 6 feet thick.
The *Houghton*, an East India Company vessel, had brought coffee seeds of the “Green Tipped Bourbon” variety from the port of Mocha in Yemen (requested by Governor Edward Byfield), that were during this year being planted. The trees would come to flourish at various locations around St. Helena despite general neglect.

John Bartram of Philadelphia began corresponding with Peter Collinson, Miller, and others.

(Their exchange is the likely source of pawpaw, sourwood, and other American plants introduced to cultivation in Europe.)
June: Water, stored in tubs in Chapel Valley on St. Helena, was breeding swarms of mosquitoes that invaded every house.

August: Turk’s Cap Valley on St. Helena was fortified.
February 1, Tuesday: “Old Will,” one of the 1st settlers who arrived during 1659 on the island of St. Helena, died at the age of approximately 104 years (he had seen a succession of 21 island governors).

According to the Concord Town Record, “Jonas Wheeler ye son of Benjamin Wheeler and Rebekah his wife was born February:1:1736/7”
A hurricane was recorded in Guadeloupe. The town of Grand-Terre was severely damaged.

There was severe drought on the island of St. Helena.

July 28, Friday (Old Style): On St. Helena, Governor Captain Isaac Pyke had violent convulsions, possibly occasioned by gout, and died.

July 29, Saturday (Old Style): Captain Isaac Pyke was succeeded as Governor of St. Helena by John Goodwin (Governor Goodwin would borrow extensively from East India Company funds, then die suddenly leaving his widow with “large debt”).
Captain Robert Jenkins had since 1731 been going around London waving his ear in the air and reporting on how it had been severed by the Spanish. The outbreak of the “War of Jerkins’ Ear” (to 1748) and of “King George’s War,” with Spain and Britain struggling over control of North American and Caribbean waters, would cause various native tribes to flee into the Florida peninsula.
August: Governor of St. Helena John Goodwin had borrowed substantially from the funds entrusted to him by the East India Company, so when he suddenly died the widow was left with “large debt.”
May 9, Tuesday (Old Style): Captain Robert Jenkins[^17] arrived on St. Helena to take up the office of Governor, charged by the East India Company to investigate accusations of corruption brought against the previous officeholder. He would reside at Lemon Grove on Sandy Bay.

[^17]: This is the one-eared Jenkins whose ear had in 1731 been severed by Spanish coast guards — eventuating in the “War of Jenkins’ Ear” that had begun in 1739 and would continue into 1748 (one wonders how many ears got cut off in a war by this name).
March 22, Monday (Old Style): Governor Captain Robert Jenkins was succeeded on St. Helena by Major Thomas Lambert, but not until after uncovering in the island’s account books a shortage of £6,284 — the accusations had been accurate and there had been the most massive fraud by the previous acting governor.

Governor Lambert would create this island’s 1st hospital.

July 20, Tuesday (Old Style): George Gabriel Powell was proclaimed governor of St. Helena upon the death by illness of Governor Major Thomas Lambert (by March 1744 Governor Powell would be accused of several incidents of embezzlement and abuse).
March 11, Sunday (1743, Old Style): Colonel David Dunbar took over as Governor of St. Helena.

October: Thomas and James Greentree were fined £10 each because they had refused to impound their goats at Peak Gutt on St. Helena for inspection. They were advised that they were being treated mercifully, because disobeying the law was the beginning of rebellion and the consequence of rebellion was of course execution.

“Voted by ye Chh yt as things appear at present our Sister Sarah Robbins about ye last of May was guilty of ye Sin of Drunkenness & in Consideration thereof ye She be debarred from Communion in ye Special ordinances of ye Gospel for a Season,— yt we will privately use Means for her Conviction, & are ready to hear with Candour any thing which She may offer in her own Vindication within Six weeks from this Time.”

18. An excerpt from the records of the 1st Parish in Brewster MA on Cape Cod, which was formerly the 1st Parish in Harwich.
December: Jenny, a great-grandmother of Frederick Douglass, was born on Skinner Plantation.

On St. Helena, to resolve an argument between the two of them, Governor Dunbar had a Mr Dixon locked up (one year later the East India Company’s Court of Directors would oblige Dunbar to resign in favour of Charles Hutchinson).

On St. Helena, Thomas Greentree was charged with selling liquor without a licence.
March 14, Saturday (1746, Old Style): On St. Helena, Governor Colonel David Dunbar had locked up a Mr. Dixon to resolve an argument between them. On hearing of this the East India Company’s Directors had ordered Dunbar to resign, and on this day he was replaced by Charles Hutchinson.

June: Lemons had become scarce on St. Helena. The once-abundant lemon trees were mostly gone, or dead.
February: Rear-Admiral of the blue Edward Boscawen, Commander-in-Chief in the East Indies, arrived at St. Helena with 8 ships.
January: At several points, high surf or rollers damaged St. Helena property and sea defences.

July: The burial ground of Jamestown, St. Helena was full. It would no longer be possible to lay a corpse at the accustomed depth.
January: The short period of relative calm on the Great Lakes of America came to an abrupt end as Robert Rogers and his Rangers attacked a French party coming down on sleighs on the lake from Canada. They took 7 prisoners but found themselves being pursued by a larger party of French troops. When they were overtaken in a ravine near Carillon, there was a pitched battle that is now referred to as the battle of La Barbue Creek. Of the Rangers 14 were killed, 6 wounded, and 6 taken prisoner. Major Rogers was wounded twice but escaped to Fort William Henry. The French had lost up to a third of their men.

On St. Helena, soldiers were employed to kill wild cats.

Adam Ferguson returned from Leipzig to Edinburgh and succeeded David Hume as librarian to the Faculty of Advocates — but would soon relinquish this office upon being appointed as a tutor in the family of the Earl of Bute.
The Directors of the East India Company asked Governor Charles Hutchinson of St. Helena to “accommodate in a suitable manner with diet and apartments at the Company’s expense” the Reverend Dr. Nevil Maskelyne FRS, 5th Astronomer Royal, and his party to observe the transit of Venus in June. Following a suggestion made by Halley on his visit nearly a century earlier, the Reverend would attempt to make his measurement from the advantage point of the high ridge behind Alarm House. Although a passing cloud obscured the Reverend’s view, several people down in James Valley would report making this observation. He and Waddington explained, in his British Mariner’s Guide, that lunar observations could also be critical for the precise determination of longitude at sea.

While observing the transit of Venus across the face of the sun—an event which was happening twice in this period within 8 years but which would not then be scheduled to occur again for over a century—Mikhail Vasilyevich Lomonosov determined something of great interest: The planet Venus is such a thing in the sky as to have an atmosphere.
June 17, Thursday: An earthquake at 5:00 AM shook crockery off shelves in the south part of St. Helena.
March 10, Saturday: The Reverend George Whitefield returned to Concord.

In Paris, Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart and Nannerl Mozart offered a public performance at the private theater of M. Félix.

Governor Charles Hutchinson had served the East India Company faithfully since March 14, 1747. He was acknowledged for this “good and long service” and John Skottowe was put in charge of St. Helena.
On St. Helena, a Civil and Military Fund was set up for the relief of widows and orphans of Company Officers.

ST. HELENA RECORDS

1766
Since it is clear that Henry Thoreau had access to this volume: here are the pages, out of A New Universal Collection of Authentic and Entertaining Voyages and Travels, from the Earliest Accounts to the Present Time, that pertains to the voyages of discovery of Captain William Dampier.

**CAPTAIN WILLIAM DAMPIER**

(Here, also, is the complete text of that sourcebook.)

**PERUSE THE ENTIRE BOOK!**
July: A sergeant, 6 soldiers and a slave deserted St. Helena in a long boat. All would arrive safely in England. Eight years later one of these men would return to the island.

The periodic comet Lexell passed within 0.0151 astronomical units of us — that is, this one missed us by a mere 1,401,200 miles.19

This comet was observed by a whole bunch of people, including Benjamin West.

19. This marks the closest that we know a comet has passed to Earth to date, without of course impacting.
January: As in 1755, at several points high surf or rollers damaged St. Helena property and sea defences.

Maggio 1, Wednesday: Mount Vesuvius erupted: “Effusiva — Colata di lava verso NW (Ercolano). Danni a vari poderi di Ercolano.” The eruptions would continue until Saturday the 11th.

From the journal of Captain James Cook, who arrived on the Resolution with the naturalists Sir Joseph Banks and David Solander:

Fresh Trade and Pleasant weather. At 6 A.M. saw the Island of St. Helena bearing West, distant 8 or 9 Leagues. At Noon Anchor’d in the Road, before James’s Fort, in 24 fathoms water. Found riding here His Majesty’s Ship Portland and Swallow20 Sloop, and 12 Sail of Indiaman. At our first seeing the Fleet in this Road we took it for granted that it was a War; but in this we were soon agreeably deceived. The Europa Indiaman Anchor’d here a little before us; she sail’d from the Cape 2 days after us, and brings an account the French Ship we saw standing into Table Bay was a French Man of War, of 64 Guns, bound to India, and that there were 2 more on their Passage. Wind South-East. At noon at Anchor in St. Helena Road.

Thursday, 2nd. Clear, Pleasant weather. In the P.M. moor’d with the Kedge Anchor, and in the A.M. received some few Officers' stores from the Portland. Wind Ditto. At noon at Anchor in St. Helena Road.

Friday, 3rd. Clear, Pleasant weather. Employ’d repairing Sails, overhauling the Rigging, etc. Wind South-East. At noon at Anchor in St. Helena Road.

Saturday, 4th. Little wind and pleasant weather. At 6 A.M. the Portland made the Signal to unmoor, and at Noon to Weigh, at which time the Ships began to get under Sail. Wind Ditto. At noon at Anchor in St. Helena Road.

Sunday, 5th. Gentle breezes and Clear weather. At 1 P.M. weigh’d, and stood out of the Road in company with the Portland and 12 Sail of Indiamen. At 6 o’clock James Port, St. Helena, bore East 1/2 South, distant 3 Leagues. In the A.M. found the Variation to be 13 degrees 10 minutes West. Wind East by South; course North 50 degrees 30 minutes West; distance 71 miles; latitude 15 degrees 5 minutes South, longitude 6 degrees 46

20. This was not the same Swallow that preceded Cook in circumnavigation. She had been broken up.
minutes West.

ST. HELENA RECORDS
Since the 1st Parish Church in Jamestown on the island of St. Helena had become dilapidated, a new structure was erected. (St. James’s now has the distinction of being the most antique Anglican church in the entire Southern Hemisphere of this planet! Way to go!)
May 16, Tuesday: The Reverend Asa Dunbar recorded in his journal: “Went to Prince Town with cattle to pasture.”

Captain James Cook paid a return visit to St. Helena and this time his Resolution was greeted with a polite 13-gun salute from the Castle. A pleasant legend would eventuate that “Captain Cook is credited with having brought the tortoise Jonathan,” although in fact that giant tortoise would not hatch from its egg on an island in the East Indian Ocean for perhaps another half century. The Captain enjoyed the local beef but not much else, and would record that:

> Whoever views St Helena in its present state and can but conceive what it must have been originally, will not hastily charge the inhabitants with want of industry. Though, perhaps, they might apply it to more advantage, were more land appropriated to planting, corn, vegetables, roots, etc., instead of being laid out in pasture, which is the present mode.
May: Three soldiers deserted St. Helena in a cutter and would be presumed to have drowned at sea.

William Godwin left the school at Hoxton to take up the functions of Minister in the small town of Ware in Hertfordshire. There he would meet the Reverend Joseph Fawcet.
March: Following a heavy rain, the fortifications at Sandy Bay on St. Helena were extensively damaged by a flow of water (in 1787 the fortifications at Rupert’s would be likewise damaged).

July: Noah Webster, Jr. initiated his own school at Sharon, Connecticut, probably in the home of John Cotton Smith. The better Whig families, who had fled to Sharon when the British had taken over in New-York, would send their children to this school.

On St. Helena, James Youd, a sergeant-major, was acquitted of having beaten his women slave to death by hitting her over the head with a wooden staff.

September: Noah Webster, Jr. received an MA from Yale College. His dissertation topic was “On the universal diffuse of literature as introductory to the universal diffusion of Christianity.”

The Royal Navy brought 6 captured Dutch ships to James Bay, St. Helena.

November: Two French ships captured off the Cape of Good Hope were brought to St. Helena by HMS Hannibal.

During this month and the following one, American forces under Major General Nathanael Greene retook most of South Carolina and advanced to within 15 miles of the British headquarters in the port of Charleston.
January 28, Monday: At 1:40PM, for about 4 seconds, an earthquake accompanied by a rumbling noise was experienced throughout St. Helena (in 1818 another earthquake, lasting 30 seconds, would be experienced, and in 1869 a minor tremor).

July 25, Thursday: John Skottowe had served the East India Company as governor of St. Helena since March 10, 1764. His wife was said to have “displayed her talents at pleasant raillery” in teasing Captain Cook about the description of the island attributed to him. His attempts to control drunkenness amongst his garrison soldiers had led to their hostility, and some of his troops had deserted, stolen boats, and fled the island (most of these deserters had of course drowned at sea but a group of 7, and a slave, had succeeded in reaching Brazil). On this day he was succeeded in office by Daniel Corneille.
29th day 12th month: Friend John Congdon of South Kingstown, Rhode Island manumitted a Negro Lad Named Dick about 14 years of age and pledged that for the meanwhile he would provide for instruct and direct him. “During his Infancy,” until the age of 21, Dick the former slave was to play the role of apprentice.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name of slave</th>
<th>Owned by</th>
<th>Date of emancipation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Jane</td>
<td>Richard Smith</td>
<td>27th 12th mo 1773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pegg</td>
<td>Stephen Richmond</td>
<td>1st 11th mo 1773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillis and her two children</td>
<td>John Knowles</td>
<td>27th 9th mo 1773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Casper and Judith</td>
<td>Jeremiah Browning</td>
<td>15th 1st mo 1780</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Richard</td>
<td>William Robinson</td>
<td>29th 12th mo 1783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Israel</td>
<td>John Congdon</td>
<td>29th 3d mo 1784</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luce</td>
<td>William Congdon</td>
<td>24th 7th mo 1783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jack</td>
<td>Barthe Knowles</td>
<td>4th 8th mo 1786</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fan</td>
<td>Robert Knowles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Joseph Knowles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Charles Congdon</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hannah Knowles</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Changes to St. Helena licensing laws meaning soldiers could not obtain arrack from the island’s Punch Houses. 200 soldiers, bayonets fixed, marched on the Governor.

Although nearly 100 would be condemned to death, only 10 would actually hang. The governor would withdraw the new liquor regulations.
Spring: Fletcher Christian visited St. Helena for 3 weeks, as acting lieutenant of HMS *Eurydice* on its way back to England after service with the squadron of Sir Edward Hughes.

May: Ichabod Parker’s Hotel (Mishawum House) opened in Woburn MA.

A munitions store near the Castle accidentally blew up, killing 2 St. Helenians.  

July: On St. Helena, Elizabeth Renton, shopkeeper’s wife, was acquitted of murder. She had stabbed her slave girl under the left shoulder. The fatal wound had been nearly five inches deep.

21. “St. Helenians” is a neologism used in this database. The inhabitants of the island are known among themselves as “Saints.”
January: As in 1755 and 1771, at several points high surf or rollers damaged St. Helena property and sea defences.

With the troops of General Benjamin Lincoln advancing from Boston toward Springfield, Massachusetts, the farmers of Shays’ Rebellion had little alternative but to stage an attack on the government arsenal that had been created in Springfield by General George Washington. Unexpectedly, instead of surrendering, General William Shepard’s militia opened fire with the arsenal’s cannons, killing four of these neighbors and wounding twenty others. Daniel Shays, Jason Parmenter, and others implicated in the rebellion fled into Vermont, which was not yet part of the federal union. Of those rebels who hung around to face the music and take their chances, some 200 would be indicted by a special court (Parmenter, caught sneaking back into Massachusetts one night, among them). They would be represented by Caleb Strong, a conservative who was almost as hostile toward them as was the prosecuting attorney.

June: When William Worrall and his slave stole some sheep, this was witnessed by other St. Helena slaves who reported the offence. Since of course the word of a slave could not be taken against the word of a free man, Worrall’s slave was tried and convicted but all that would happen to Worrall himself was that he received £15 compensation for the loss of his slave.

Two cases in this month of this year raise the interesting question of why, if we USers are so wonderful, sometimes folks do everything they can to put distance between themselves and us. The two cases are a band of religious refugees fleeing into the wilderness, and a band of free black Americans attempting to flee back to Africa. As follows:

• 25 followers of Jemimah Wilkinson, the disowned Universal Friend, among whom were the families of Abel Botsford, Peleg and John Briggs, and Isaac Nichols, met at Schenectady, New York and loaded themselves into a bateaux destined for their promised land. At Geneva they found one solitary, unfinished log cabin, that of Jennings. They went up the east side of Seneca Lake to Apple Town and there, for several days, they searched for a mill site (the first grist mill in upstate New York would be constructed by Richard Smith, Joseph Parker, and Abraham Dayton, on a site a few miles from Penn Yan later to be occupied by the Empire Mills). They would purchase, at auction, some 14,000 acres at a little less than 2s. per acre, and then they would purchase land for their settlement of Jerusalem for 1s., 2d. per acre.

• When Revolutionary veteran Prince Hall had offered to lead a contingent of 700 black soldiers from the Boston area to put down Shays’ Rebellion in western Massachusetts, officials had elected to deploy instead only white troops. This was considered such a serious insult, that Hall obtained 70 signatures of black Bostonians on a petition to the General Court, for funds to transport Africans back to Africa:

   [W]e find ourselves, in many respects, in very disagreeable and disadvantaged circumstances; most of which must attend us as
June 22, Friday: Asa Dunbar, who had been ill, died in Keene, New Hampshire at age 42 after about four years practice of law there, and would be buried with Masonic honors. He left five children, his youngest, Cynthia Dunbar, being but one month of age. Mary Jones Dunbar, his widow, surviving him by a great many years, would remarry.

Daniel Corneille was replaced as governor of St. Helena by Colonel Sir Robert Brooke (until July 13, 1801 — it would be Governor Brooke who would erect Plantation House).

July: Isaac Hicksled was killed by a shark while swimming near the St. Helena landing place.

25 followers of Jemimah Wilkinson, the disowned Universal Friend, journeyed from Connecticut to the Mohawk River, then to Seneca Lake, New York where they arrived near today’s Dresden. Jemimah herself was not among them, and would follow only after some of the initial hardships had been reduced: “We go to prepare a place for you.”
June 24, Wednesday: On St. Helena, William Whaley was hanged as a “highway robber” for taking a piece of cloth from a sailor in the street.

August: John Wedderburn Halkett was admitted to the Scottish bar at Edinburgh.

On St. Helena, the will of Mrs. Clarissa Leech revealed that she had authored her own epitaph:

**HERE LAY THE BODY OF CLARISSA LEECH**  
**WHO LIVED IN PAIN BUT DIED WITH PLEASURE**
Paris sent an army to restore order in Saint Domingue, only to have its military commanders favor and support the rebellious slaves.

Governor Robert Brooke of St. Helena drew up a code of laws for the control and protection of slaves which limited the authority of the master and extended the authority of the magistrates. Further importation of slaves was forbidden.

February: A St. Helena soldier missing for two days was found at Turk’s Cap where he had fallen, unhurt, onto a ledge.
December 17, Monday: Captain William Bligh brought his Providence and Assistant to St. Helena en route to Jamaica after a 2d South Seas voyage, and Governor Colonel Sir Robert Brooke had him greeted with a polite 13-gun salute from the Castle. He left some mountain rice seed for the inhabitants, and 10 breadfruit plants (that would succumb to lack of attention).

Virginia enacted “An Act to reduce into one, the several acts concerning slaves, free negroes, and mulattoes.”

§ 1. “Be it enacted ..., That no persons shall henceforth be slaves within this commonwealth, except such as were so on the seventeenth day of October,” 1785, “and the descendants of the females of them."

§ 2. “Slaves which shall hereafter be brought into this commonwealth, and kept therein one whole year together, or so long at different times as shall amount to one year, shall be free.”
§ 4. “Provided, That nothing in this act contained, shall be construed to extend to those who may incline to remove from any of the United States and become citizens of this, if within sixty days after such removal, he or she shall take the following oath before some justice of the peace of this commonwealth: ‘I, A.B., do swear, that my removal into the state of Virginia, was with no intent of evading the laws for preventing the further importation of slaves, nor have I brought with me any slaves, with an intention of selling them, nor have any of the slaves which I have brought with me, been imported from Africa, or any of the West India islands, since the first day of November,’" 1778, etc.

§ 53. This act to be in force immediately. Statutes at Large of Virginia, New Series, I. 122.
March: From this point into 1808, Joseph Hosmer would be in Concord.

It had been 84 years since it had been supposed that St. Helena would be utterly ruined within a couple of decades if tree planting was unsuccessful. The trees had not been planted but the island was still in existence! — and the Court of Directors of the East India Company was still urging the Governor and Council to encourage tree planting as “of the utmost importance to the island.” The Directors were encouraging tree planting to limit the effects of drought because, even in this early era, it was already understood that tree leaves attract moisture from the air which then drips to the ground.
The report of the gardener at Longwood on St. Helena described “total neglect” of deforested areas and foresaw that his generation of caretakers would, by the generations to follow, be condemned for neglect.

He made no mention of giant tortoises on the lawn.

July: Governor Colonel Sir Robert Brooke dispatched 11 officers and 400 men of the St. Helena Corps, with ordnance and money, to assist Admiral George Keith Elphinstone at the capture of the Cape of Good Hope from the Dutch.

October: Thanks were sent to Governor Colonel Sir Robert Brooke, Captain Seale, and oh yeah, also, the guys of the St. Helena Corps, for the part they had played in securing victory for British forces in the capture of the Cape of Good Hope from the Dutch.

In the course of this month the Reverend Timothy Dwight would pass through Marlborough on his way through Concord. The following material is to be found in his TRAVELS, and also in his STATISTICAL ACCOUNT:

Marlboro is an ancient settlement, begun in 1654, and incorporated in 1660. ... Its surface is like that of the country last described. The soil is rich grazing land of the first quality rewarding abundantly the toil of the owners, and presenting to the eye of the traveler a continued succession of the deepest verdure. Great numbers of cattle, of the largest size and best quality, are fed on these rich pastures; and the large, well-built barns and good farmers’ houses are decisive indications of prosperity.

This town is universally settled in plantations, except a small village on the road near to one of the churches.

From Marlboro eastward, throughout a country extending to Piscataqua River on the north and to the counties of Bristol and Plymouth on the south, the barberry bush is spread, not universally, but in spots, and those often extensive. In some fields they occupy a sixth, fifth, and even a fourth of the surface. Neat farmers exterminate them, except from the sides of their stone enclosures. Here it is impossible to eradicate them, unless by removing the walls, for the roots pass under the walls and spring up so numerous as to make a regular and well-compacted hedge. It is altogether improbable therefore that they will ever be extirpated.

This bush is in New England generally believed to blast both wheat and rye. Its blossoms, which are very numerous and continue a considerable time, emit very copiously a pungent effluvium, believed to be so acrimonious as to injure essentially both these kinds of grain. Among other accounts
intended to establish the truth of this opinion, I have heard the following: A farmer on Long Island sowed a particular piece of ground with wheat every second year for near twenty years. On the southern limit of this field grew a single barberry bush. The southern winds prevailing at the season in which this bush was in bloom carried the effluvia, and afterwards the decayed blossoms, over a small breadth of this field to a considerable distance; and, wherever they fell, the wheat was blasted, while throughout the remainder of the field it was sound. This account I have from a respectable gentleman who received it from the farmer himself, a man of fair reputation.

In Southboro, a township in the county of Worcester, a Mr. Johnson sowed with rye a field of new ground, or ground lately deforested. At the south end of this field also grew a single barberry bush. The grain was blasted throughout the whole breadth of the field, on a narrow tract commencing at the bush and proceeding directly in the course and to the extent in which the blossoms were diffused by the wind.

As no part of the grain was blasted in either of these cases except that which lay in a narrow tract leeward of the barberry bushes, these facts appear to be decisive and to establish the correctness of the common opinion. Should the conclusion be admitted, we cannot wonder that wheat and rye should be blasted wherever these bushes abound.

A laboring man attached to the family of Mr. Williams, our host in this town, informed me that in Mr. Williams’ garden a barberry bush grew in the wall a number of years; that during this period esculent roots, although frequently planted near it, never came to such a degree of perfection as to be fit for use; that such as grew at all appeared to be lean and shriveled, as if struggling with the influence of an unfriendly climate; that the wall was afterwards removed and the bush entirely eradicated; that in the first succeeding season such roots flourished perfectly well on the same spot and were of a good quality; and that, ever since, they had grown year by year to the same perfection. My informant added that the soil was very rich, and throughout every other part of the garden was always entirely suited to the growth of these vegetables, and that it was not more highly manured after the removal of the bush than before. This is the only instance of the kind within my knowledge. If there be no error in the account, it indicates that the barberry bush has an unfavorable influence on other vegetable productions besides wheat and rye.

In the year 1790, Marlboro contained 218 dwelling houses, and 1,554 inhabitants; in the year 1800, 239 dwelling houses, and 1,735 inhabitants; and in 1810, 1,674.

From the year 1760 to 1795, thirty-five years, there were 726 deaths, and 1,672 births in this town. The average of the deaths is somewhat less than twenty-one annually; the average of births a small fraction less than forty-eight.

22. Capt. George Williams (1737-1813) of Marlboro ran Williams’ Tavern as well as his farm. A town selectman, he was evidently the kind host of the ailing Duc de La Rochefoucauld-Liancourt, whose TRAVELS THROUGH THE UNITED STATES OF NORTH AMERICA … (trans. H. Neuman, London, 1799), II, 205, makes clear that Williams’ place was in Marlboro.
The road from Marlboro to Concord passes through the skirts of Stow. The surface is a succession of gradual acclivities and flat valleys. The soil of the acclivities is loam, mixed with gravel, and moderately good. The valleys, or as they might with equal propriety be styled the plains, are sandy and lean. Among a considerable number of indifferent houses we saw a few good ones.
October 1, Thursday: Beginning a series of journeys through New England towns which would occupy him into the year 1815, the Reverend Timothy Dwight passed through Concord, Massachusetts and conversed with the Reverend Ezra Ripley in regard to the exceptional health of the citizenry:

The salubrity of Concord violates the most received medical theories concerning such diseases as are supposed to be generated by stagnant waters. I know of no stream which approaches nearer to a state of stagnation than Concord River.
Dwight analyzed the stagnant-water situation in great detail:
A number of years since, I put a quantity of ground pepper into a tumbler of water, and a few days afterwards found a thin scum spread over the surface. Within a few days more, I perceived on examining this scum with a microscope that it exhibited an immense number of living animalcules. Two or three days after, examining the same scum again, I found not the least appearance of life. After another short period, the scum was replenished with living beings again, and after another became totally destitute of them. This alternate process continued until the water became so fetid as to forbid a further examination. The conclusion which I drew from these facts was that the first race of animalcules, having laid their eggs, died, and were succeeded in a short time by a second, and these by a third.

The fetor which arose from the putrefaction of these ephemeral beings differed in one respect from that which is produced by the decay of larger animals. Although it was perceptible at a small distance only, and perhaps less loathsome than the smell of a corrupted carcass, it was far more suffocating. When the effluvia were received into the lungs, it seemed as if nature gave way and was preparing to sink under the impression. A pungency, entirely peculiar, accompanied the smell, and appeared to lessen the vis vita in a manner different from anything which I had ever experienced before.

The scum which covered this pepper water was in appearance the same with that which in hot seasons is sometimes seen on standing waters, and abounds on those of marshes exposed to the sun. To the production, and still more to the sustenance of animalcules, vegetable putrefaction seems to be necessary, or at least concomitant: the nidus perhaps in which the animalculine existence is formed, or the pabulum by which it is supported.

Whatever instrumentality vegetable putrefaction may have, I am inclined to suspect, for several reasons, than animalculine putrefaction is the immediate cause of those diseases, whatever they are, which are justly attributed to standing waters. It will, I believe, be found universally that no such disease is ever derived from any standing waters which are not to a considerable extent covered with a scum; and perhaps most, if not all, of those which have this covering will be found unhealthy. The New England lakes, so far as I have observed, are universally free even from the thinnest pellicle of this nature; are pure potable water; are supplied almost wholly by subjacent springs; and are, therefore, too cool, as well as too much agitated by winds, to permit ordinarily the existence of animalcules....
Mr. Williams informed us that he knew no spot more healthy than the borders of this piece of water; particularly, that no endemic had ever prevailed here; that his own father, who had spent his life on this spot, and died between eighty and ninety years of age, had enjoyed the best health; and that there were, and generally had been, as many healthy and aged people in these houses as in any equal number of habitations within his knowledge. It has been commonly supposed that standing waters are insalubrious in countries subjected to such intense heat as that of a New England summer. The supposition, however, is almost, if not quite absolutely erroneous so far as New England is concerned. There is probably as great a number of small lakes and ponds in this country as in any of the same extent on the globe. After very extensive inquiries, I have been unable to find one, the margin of which is not healthy ground I speak not here of artificial ponds; these are often unhealthy. I speak of those which nature has formed, and all these appear to be perfectly salubrious. Within the township of Plymouth, which is very large, the number is uncommonly great; but they have never been known to produce any disagreeable effects.

Decayed vegetables have been imagined to furnish an explanation of the insalubrity of stagnant waters. To some extent this opinion may be just. They cannot, I think, be ordinarily concerned in producing the fever and ague, because this disease is almost always experienced originally in the spring. Besides, vegetables decay in New England as well as elsewhere; and yet, eastward of the western ridge of the Green Mountains, the fever and ague, so far as I have been able to learn, is absolutely unknown, except in solitary instances in the neighborhood of two or three marshes within the township of Guilford. But I suppose vegetable putrefaction to be especially considered as the cause of autumnal diseases. That vegetable putrefaction may be an auxiliary cause of these evils may, I think, be rationally admitted. But that it is the sole, or even the principal cause may be fairly questioned. This putrefaction exists regularly every year; the diseases in any given place, rarely. The putrefaction exists throughout the whole country; the diseases, whenever they exist, are confined to a few particular spots. Should it be said that stagnant waters are necessary to this effect, I answer that in the large tract of country which I have specified no such effect is produced by these waters, and that the diseases here prevail as often where no such waters exist as in their neighborhood; that they are found on plains, in valleys, on hills, and even on the highest inhabited mountains.
Saul Solomon arrived on St. Helena at the age of 20. He would set up a press and publish the Register.
May: On St. Helena, a decision was taken to fortify Ladder Hill on the land side, to withstand any possible siege (just in case anybody other than us wants to be stuck out here on this godforsaken island).

Thomas Campbell went to Edinburgh to attend lectures on law. He would support himself by private teaching and by writing, towards which he would be helped by the editor of BRITISH POETS, Dr. Robert Anderson. Also in Edinburgh at that time were Sir Walter Scott, Henry Brougham, Francis Jeffrey, Dr. Thomas Brown, John Leyden, and James Grahame.
November: Richard Colley Wesley, Earl of Mornington, soon to become Governor-General of India, and Arthur Wellesley, future 1st Duke of Wellington, sent a diamond-crusted ceremonial sword to Governor Colonel Sir Robert Brooke in recognition of his speedy and effective assistance against Dutch men-of-war, and for having dispatched soldiers and ordnance from St. Helena to reinforce depleted English forces fighting the Dutch on the Cape of Good Hope.
January 15, Wednesday: Job, a slave of Mr. Defountaine, was hanged as a “highway robber” for having snatched a liquor bottle away from a drunken sailor.
July 13, Monday: Colonel Sir Robert Brooke, who had been governor of St. Helena since June 22, 1787 and had erected the Plantation House, resigned and would be succeeded on March 11, 1802 by Colonel Robert Patton.
March: Samuel Taylor Coleridge resided temporarily in the Lake District (until November).

A census counted 893 military personnel, 122 families and civil servants, 241 planters, 227 freed blacks, and 1,029 slaves, for a total population of 2,511 on the island of St. Helena (I suspect this may not have included wives and children).

March 11, Thursday: Colonel Robert Patton took over as Governor of St. Helena (he would serve until July 13, 1807 and would recommend to the East India Company that it import Chinese coolies for a rural workforce).

August: Napoléon Bonaparte’s title of First Consul (granted in 1799) was extended for life.

George Annesley, Viscount Valentia and Henry Salt visited St. Helena, where they joined up with the botanist Henry Porteous (Porteous would be noted for having as guests in his boarding house both the Duke of Wellington and Napoléon Bonaparte, albeit at different times).
Nicholas Appert, the French chef who had developed the canning of meats and vegetables inside jars sealed with pitch as military supplies for Napoléon’s armies, opened his own vacuum-packing plant.

Napoléon Bonaparte laid plans to capture St. Helena from the English. Decres, the Navy Minister, had organized 8 ships and 1,500 men, but before they could set sail the Emperor had altered the destination to Surinam.
June 20, Thursday: Major General Sir Arthur Wellesley stopped by St. Helena aboard the Trident after his victory at Assaye, India. The conqueror commented favorably on the climate of the island. (This is a small island with few amenities: the Duke of Wellington occupied the same small pavilion in the garden of “The Briars,” home of the Balcombe family, that Napoléon Bonaparte would use until he relocated to “Longwood.”)
1806

The St. Helena Brigade attempted to capture Buenos Aires, but did not succeed.

A St. Helena telegraph system was installed, the 1st outside Europe, to replace signal guns previously used to warn of attack.
March: Captain Paul Cuffe sailed his *Alpha* from Savannah for Russia, via Sweden and Denmark. He would be forced to turn back to Denmark due to war conditions at sea. On his return to America, his vessel would nearly founder off Greenland.

Measles, brought by a fleet of ships from the Cape of Good Hope, was impacting every family on *St. Helena*.

April: George Gordon, Lord Byron prepared more poems for publication.

The epidemic of measles on *St. Helena* had claimed 150 lives.

July 13, Monday: Colonel Robert Patton completed his term as governor of *St. Helena*. His daughters’ fondness for walking had led to the naming of “Sisters Walk.” The next full-time governor would be Major-General Alexander Beatson, who would take office on July 4, 1808.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

2 day 13 of 7 Mt 1807 / The times as to the outward Seem to be Alarming preparation for War is making in our land, orders are received from Government to raise an hundred thousand Militia- I have had a little to examine my own standing to see whether I am able to stand my ground, should I be pressed as a souldier, & have a hope that should I be tried on this head I shall be favoured to give a convincing reason for my refusal to bear Arms. It is the desire of my heart while I write this, that I may be favoured to bear up the Christian testimony in a Christian Spirit, & bring no reproach on that testimony which our Worthy forefathers Suffered so much for. Had the company of JS a young man not of our Society but an attender of meetings, he appears to be an innocent young man, & desires are raised that he may experience the Sanctifiying power of truth effectually to opperate in his mind.
Our national birthday, Monday the 4th of July: Nathaniel Hawthorne’s, or Hathorne’s 4th birthday.

In Richmond, Virginia it was resolved that only liquor that had been produced in this nation might be consumed on during this nation’s birthday celebration.

Walton Felch’s son Hiram E. Felch of Boston would inform us of a family tradition, that at the age of 18 his father had delivered a Fourth of July Oration.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

2nd day 4 of 7 M / For what it is called Independence day we have had a very still time the least drunkeness & noise I ever recollect at a similar time

Major-General Alexander Beatson took over as governor of St. Helena from Colonel Robert Patton.
Benjamin Robert Haydon took on his 1st pupil, Charles Lock Eastlake. He finished his painting of the final struggle of Dentatus (this would result in a lifelong quarrel with the Royal Academy when, rather than displaying the painting in its great hall, they decided to consign it to a small side-room).

23. None of Salt’s picture-postcard views command as high prices as the stuff that would be painted in Vienna by the young artist Adolf Hitler (even though they’re approximately as interesting).
January: Saul Solomon of the St. Helena press was given to understand that he was no longer to insert objectionable remarks into his Register without explicit prior permission of the Secretary. Understand, young man, this is a Company island!

May: The church structure in Carlisle, Massachusetts was struck by lightning, and burned to the ground. The congregation would need to start over, to win God’s favor.

A fleet of 22 East Indiamen arrived in James Bay, St. Helena.
September: Sam Houston returned to his mother and siblings for a short period and then returned to the Hiwasee Island Cherokee band. Fatherless since the age of 13, he was adopted by Headman Oo-loo-te-ka “John Jolly” and began to be known as Co-lo-neh “The Raven.”

On St. Helena it was reported that although bastard gumwood Commidendrum rotundifolium used to grow on the hills between Rupert’s and Deadwood, and there had been a thick wood of such trees at Half Tree Hollow, over the last half century these woodlands had been entirely destroyed.
January: Percy Bysshe Shelley met Harriet Westbrook.

George Gordon, Lord Byron was back at the Capuchin Monastery in Athens.

The St. Helena Register was shut down after Saul Solomon, the owner, printed what Governor Major-General Alexander Beatson considered “objectionable remarks.”
August: The St. Helena Register resumed production after a 7-month shutdown. Saul Solomon had printed what Governor Major-General Alexander Beatson had considered “objectionable remarks.” The gazette was re-opened under the supervision of Parson Boys, who was to bring to the Governor’s prior attention any editorial copy that one might consider “doubtful communication.” (A decade later Mr. Boys himself would offer some remarks in the course of a sermon that would put him at odds with the governor.)

The small pox took its toll in Billerica, Massachusetts:

Erected
in memory of
and to designate the place where
Asa Frost
Asa Frost Jr.
Levi Frost
Eleazar Farmer
Sarah Hodgman
Samuel T. Batcheller
Were buried who died
of the smallpox Aug. 1811
Erected 1835

December 24, Tuesday: Governor Major-General Alexander Beatson also had tried to control drunkenness on St. Helena, through rationing, with results similar to those of his predecessors. On Christmas Eve about 250 soldiers had the very bad idea to stage a mutiny.  

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

3rd day 24 of 12 M // This has been a violent stormy day I did not go home to dinner, & took a little with Aunt Anna Carpenter’s Brother D R came to the Shop in the Afternoon finding nothing to do in his own - I set the eveng at home & read indubly [?] to my H in Silliman’s journal & finished it

December 25, Wednesday: Governor Major-General Alexander Beatson restored order on St. Helena, after about 250 soldiers had staged an ill-advised Christmas Eve mutiny in protest of liquor rationing.

French troops defeated the Spanish defenders of Valencia and laid siege to the city.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

4th day 25 of 12 M // By accounts today the Storm of Yesterday was more violent than we who were mostly confined within doors were aware - The Wind was so high as to blow down several trees in Broad Street & Washington Square, the large & Ancient honey

24. Asa Frost of Chelmsford MA had been born on March 13, 1767 to Ebenezer Frost and Esther Frost, and had married Rhoda Trull of Billerica, daughter of Samuel Trull, at Billerica on July 25, 1790. Rhoda Trull Frost had been born on May 31, 1759 and survived the smallpox epidemic and died on September 23, 1849.
25. Asa Frost, Jr. had been born on May 29, 1790 in Chelmsford MA, son of Asa Frost and Rhoda Trull Frost.
26. Levi Frost of Chelmsford MA had been born on September 25, 1772, son of Ebenezer Frost and Esther Frost.
27. Eleazer Farmer of Chelmsford MA, son of Simeon and Mary, had been baptized on February 1, 1767.
28. Samuel T. Batcheller was perhaps a son of Joseph Batcheller and Hannah Trull Batcheller, a sister of Rhoda Trull Frost.
29. The Governor, however, placed a high value on his own beer — when a soldier stole six bottles from one of the Plantation House cellars, he sentenced him to be hanged (said soldier would be pardoned by the Council).
locust that stood in John Earls yard, a Chimney on the Point, froze to death an horse belonging to Sandford in Middletown, drove on Shore a brigg from Ireland with 70 Passengers, Men Women & children were obliged to wade from the wreck & came from the Neck thro' the Streets this Afternoon to a house provided by the town for their accomodation on the long wharf, they were pitiable Objects indeed —

December 26, Thursday: Governor Major-General Alexander Beatson had restored order on St. Helena, after about 250 soldiers had staged a Christmas Eve holiday-spirits mutiny in protest of liquor rationing. On or by this day 6 of their members, identified as ringleaders, had been hanged.

In a theater of Richmond, Virginia, a fire killed 5 black Americans, and 68 white Americas of whom many were from prominent local families.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

5th day 26th of 12 M 1811// I walked towards Portsmouth to attend our Moy [Monthly] Meeting. Rich'd Mitchell kindly gave me a ride of about 3 Miles on my way to Meeting his Sleigh, in going over one bank we over Set but neither of us was hurt. Our Meeting was small. The Womens side of the house counted but seven & them very young Women, I suppose neither of them over 30 years of life: -Ours was large in Number, perhaps 40 of 50 - Peter Lawton was Clerk & for the first time I was assistant & succeed beyond my expectations -After meeting I rode with R Mitchell to his house & dined & after dinner a part of the way home with D Buffum in his sleigh which eased me of my journey exceedingly for if I had not have been assisted in this way it is not probable I should been able to have got home the same day. & tho’ as it was my limbs were much fatigue, yet I was glad I went, for had I had not the Books & papers of neither meeting would have been there -Jonathon Dennis the two D Buffums, little Wm Chase & myself were all that were there from Newport. The Snow Banks were formidable indeed some I walked over that I doubt not were 15 feet high.
A sorrowful affair was related to me in Portsmouth. It appears that about 7 an hour before sun set in the Storm the day before yesterday Joseph Cundel went out of his Mill & has not yet been seen or heard from Yet. they have been searching the Mill dam today & cannot find him whether he was suffocated in the snow drown’d in the Mill dam & got into the Sea is Yet undetermined, but there is no prospect of ever finding him alive.
June 22, Tuesday: Major-General Alexander Beatson completed his term as governor of St. Helena and was succeeded by Colonel Mark Wilks.

October: Napoléon Bonaparte tried unsuccessfully to defeat the Allies in Germany, with a major battle at Leipzig.

A St. Helena library was established through the patronage of Governor Colonel Mark Wilks.
A Benevolent Society was founded on the island of St. Helena by Governor Colonel Mark Wilks to provide the means of education to “the children of slaves, free blacks and the poorer classes of the community.”

30. Governor Wilks had also created a Library and Post Office.
After his recovery at home, Frederick Marryat was appointed Commander, and would cruise the sloop Beaver off St. Helena to guard against any escape by Napoléon Bonaparte. When his prisoner eventually would die, he would make a sketch of him in full profile, which would be engraved in England and France.

In France, after a loud boom, a stone fell out of the open sky. That presumably didn’t have anything to do with what was happening here on this planet of ours. But, on the ground, Louis XVIII was being restored to the throne. When Napoléon Bonaparte left Elba and landed in France in March, Louis XVIII fled and “The Hundred Days” began. Britain secured a declaration against the international slave trade at the Congress of Vienna. Sugar prices continued high. The slave trade to Cuba began to rise sharply. Austria, Britain, Prussia and Russia formed a new alliance.
Wellington and Blucher would defeat Napoleon Bonaparte at Waterloo on June 18th — an event which would give rise to any number of sets of chesspieces.

(Carl Phillip Gottfried von Clausewitz, who it would seem knew a whole lot about war, fought in the Waterloo campaign as chief of staff to General Thielmann’s IIId Prussian army corps.)
(Napoleon would for the 2nd time abdicate, and would this time be banished not to Sardinia but, by John Barrow as 2d Secretary to the Admiralty, to the island of St. Helena in the South Atlantic.)
Louis XVIII returned to Paris. Marshall Ney was executed for aiding Napoleon at Waterloo. Prince Klemens von Metternich, who would dominate Austrian politics until 1848, represented his country at Vienna, and the Congress of Vienna decided the map of Europe (the German Confederation was formed, and the Swiss Confederation was reestablished and its territory expanded). Walter Scott visited the battlefield of Waterloo, meeting Wellington, Blucher, and other famous generals, and got himself publicly kissed on both cheeks by the commander of the Cossack contingent. When he would entertain French prisoners-of-war from Selkirk at Abbotsford he would ask for their reminiscences about Napoleon Bonaparte. (This would help him in his 9-volume LIFE OF NAPOLEON, to be issued in 1827.)

January: The schooner St. Helena arrived from England for use by the East India Company’s government of St. Helena.

Portugal accepted £750,000 to restrict the international slave trade conducted by its subjects to Brazil and other points south of the equator, effective immediately — and a complete ban on the slave trade to take effect as of January 21, 1823.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Slave-trade Abolished by</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1802</td>
<td>Denmark</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1807</td>
<td>Great Britain; United States</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1813</td>
<td>Sweden</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1814</td>
<td>Netherlands</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1815</td>
<td>Portugal (north of the equator)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1817</td>
<td>Spain (north of the equator)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1818</td>
<td>France</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1820</td>
<td>Spain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1829</td>
<td>Brazil (?)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1830</td>
<td>Portugal</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

W.E. Burghardt Du Bois: During the peace negotiations between the United States and Great Britain in 1783, it was proposed by Jay, in June, that there be a proviso inserted as follows: *Provided that the subjects of his Britannic Majesty shall not have any right or claim under the convention, to carry or import, into the said States any slaves from any part of the world; it being the intention of the said States entirely to prohibit the
importation thereof.31 Fox promptly replied: "If that be their policy, it never can be competent to us to dispute with them their own regulations."32 No mention of this was, however, made in the final treaty, probably because it was thought unnecessary.

In the proposed treaty of 1806, signed at London December 31, Article 24 provided that "The high contracting parties engage to communicate to each other, without delay, all such laws as have been or shall be hereafter enacted by their respective Legislatures, as also all measures which shall have been taken for the abolition or limitation of the African slave trade; and they further agree to use their best endeavors to procure the co-operation of other Powers for the final and complete abolition of a trade so repugnant to the principles of justice and humanity."33 This marks the beginning of a long series of treaties between England and other powers looking toward the prohibition of the traffic by international agreement. During the years 1810-1814 she signed treaties relating to the subject with Portugal, Denmark, and Sweden.34 May 30, 1814, an additional article to the Treaty of Paris, between France and Great Britain, engaged these powers to endeavor to induce the approaching Congress at Vienna "to decree the abolition of the Slave Trade, so that the said Trade shall cease universally, as it shall cease definitively, under any circumstances, on the part of the French Government, in the course of 5 years; and that during the said period no Slave Merchant shall import or sell Slaves, except in the Colonies of the State of which he is a Subject."35 In addition to this, the next day a circular letter was despatched by Castlereagh to Austria, Russia, and Prussia, expressing the hope "that the Powers of Europe, when restoring Peace to Europe, with one common interest, will crown this great work by interposing their benign offices in favour of those Regions of the Globe, which yet continue to be desolated by this unnatural and inhuman traffic."36 Meantime additional treaties were secured: in 1814 by royal decree Netherlands agreed to abolish the trade;37 Spain was induced by her necessities to restrain her trade to her own colonies, and to endeavor to prevent the fraudulent use of her flag by foreigners;38 and in 1815 Portugal agreed to abolish the slave-trade north of the equator.39

31. Sparks, DIPLOMATIC CORRESPONDENCE, X. 154.
33. AMERICAN STATE PAPERS, FOREIGN, III, page 151.
34. BRITISH AND FOREIGN STATE PAPERS, 1815-6, pages 886, 937 (quotation).
35. BRITISH AND FOREIGN STATE PAPERS, 1815-6, pages 890-1.
36. BRITISH AND FOREIGN STATE PAPERS, 1815-6, page 887. Russia, Austria, and Prussia returned favorable replies: BRITISH AND FOREIGN STATE PAPERS, 1815-6, pages 887-8.
37. BRITISH AND FOREIGN STATE PAPERS, 1815-6, page 889.
38. She desired a loan, which England made on this condition: BRITISH AND FOREIGN STATE PAPERS, 1815-6, pages 921-2.
April 14, Friday: John Warren died of an inflammation of the lungs leading to heart failure.

Lieutenant-General Sir Hudson Lowe arrived, on board HMS Phaeton, to take over from Colonel Mark Wilks as St. Helena’s governor. Although Governor Lowe had been appointed specifically to handle the exile of Napoléon Bonaparte, he would take it upon himself to reform the island’s slave laws.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

6th day 14th of 4 M / Rode with Abigail Robinson this forenoon to Ruth Mitchells - there dined. after dinner the committee met & went to visit Daniel Chase Jr & his Wife. The latter we found in a very unfavorable state of mind & they both persisted in denying what was alleged against them tho' we had Sufficient proof of their being very cruel to the child, that was placed under their care. -This opportunity was a very exercising one to the mind of all the committee, particularly in that we were unable to discover any sense of thier misconduct or signs of repentance - we returned to R Mitchells & took tea & then returned home —

July 31, Monday: The British government announced that Napoléon Bonaparte would be banished to St. Helena.

August 7, Monday: Napoléon Bonaparte was transferred to HMS Northumberland for transport to St. Helena.

August 8, Tuesday: Napoléon Bonaparte became a prisoner under transportation, destined for the island of St. Helena that was just the right distance away from France.

Of course, the defeat at Waterloo, and the events that had followed, had brought an end to the Italian judicial career of Giacomo Costantino Beltrami.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

3rd day 8 of 8 M 1815 / This afternoon I witnessed a solemn scene - I called in the latter part of the Afternoon to see Matthew Barker who has been a long time very low & in great distress & apparently Dieing for several Days, about 20 Minutes after I went into the room the scene closed, his distress continuing till near the close - When he breathed his last my sensations exceeded any thing I ever felt on seeing any person depart from time, my whole frame was shaken - every day brings us all nearer to the like Awful period & every scene like this is a solemn warning to us. to have our minds prepared for the event. - for some time he has not been entirely rational - & when I saw him this morng & at the final close he was past sensing much for any thing but his distress — I staid & assisted in laying him out
October: HMS Northumberland arrived a St. Helena with Napoléon Bonaparte. Also arriving were HMS Icarus, Havannah, Peruvian, Zenobia, Red Pole, plus Bucephalus and Ceylon transporting the 53d Regiment. Gosh, do you suppose the British had assembled enough security considering that this guy no longer had his sword?

During the War of 1812 the first Vermont had transported government stores and troops. During this month, near Ash Island, the vessel suffered its final breakdown. Its owners, James Winans and John Winans, would remove its engine and boilers to sell to the Lake Champlain Steamboat Company. Its captain, John Winans, would reside at Ticonderoga and be buried in Poughkeepsie.

October 17, Tuesday: Napoléon Bonaparte, a British prisoner after his defeat at Waterloo, stepped ashore at the island of St. Helena from HMS Northumberland. In order to prevent any escape the military presence would be increased, and the local population doubled in size.

In the Caribbean, a 3-day hurricane struck the island of Jamaica, stranding vessels and causing loss of life.
December 4, Monday/5, Tuesday: In *Mémorial de Sainte Hélène*, Las Cases explicated Napoléon Bonaparte’s remark about the rarest sort of courage: “As to moral courage, he had, he said, very rarely met with the two o’clock in the morning courage, unprepared courage,” the spontaneous courage of a soldier awakening to danger in the middle of the night.

**WALDEN**: What recommends commerce to me is its enterprise and bravery. It does not clasp its hands and pray to Jupiter. I see these men every day go about their business with more or less courage and content, doing more even than they suspect, and perchance better employed that they could have consciously devised. I am less affected by their heroism who stood up for half an hour in the front line at Buena Vista, than by the steady and cheerful valor of the men who inhabit the snow-plough for their winter quarters; who have not merely the three-o’clock in the morning courage, which Bonaparte thought was the rarest, but whose courage does not go to rest so early, who go to sleep only when the storm sleeps or the sinews of their iron steed are frozen. On this morning of the Great Snow, perchance, which is still raging and chilling men’s blood, I hear the muffled tone of their engine bell from out the fog bank of their chilled breath, which announces that the cars are coming, without long delay, notwithstanding the veto of a New England north-east snow storm, and I behold the ploughmen covered with snow and rime, their heads peering above the mould-board which is turning down other than daisies and the nests of field-mice, like bowlders of the Sierra Nevada, that occupy an outside place in the universe.
December 25, Wednesday: Carl Maria von Weber was informed by letter in Berlin that he had been appointed Kapellmeister to the King of Saxony in Dresden (he was being appointed in an attempt to provide German opera with a similar status to the Italian operas that had been dominant in the city).

A report from St. Helena: “Napoleon in very good spirits. Asked many questions in English, which he pronounced as he would have done French; yet the words were correct, and applied in their proper sense.”

40. This account by Barry Edward O'Meara, a ship’s surgeon, would be published in 1822 as VOICE FROM ST. HELENA by Simpkin, Marshall, and Co.
William Makepeace Thackeray stopped by St. Helena on his way from Calcutta to England. He was 6 years of age. Walking about the island with an Indian servant, he peeked at Napoléon Bonaparte. The servant warned that not only did Nappy eat three sheep a day but also little boys — when he could get his hands on them.

(It may or may not have been true that the former emperor liked little boys, but it is a matter of historical record that he really did enjoy the coffee grown on St. Helena. It was good stuff.)

In this year two editions appeared, of Michel Jacob Frédéric Lullin de Châteauvieux Guy De Lhérault’s Manuscript Transmitted from St. Helena, by an Unknown Channel. Translated from the French (London: John Murray, Albemarle Street). This made interesting reading for those who could suspend disbelief.
In this year the brag was made, that for the first time in the USA a woman’s labor was being assigned a real monetary value — which would be an allusion to the fact that Lowell, Massachusetts was in this year pioneering the “material girl”:

For the first time in this country woman’s labor had a monetary value.... And thus a long upward step in our material civilization was taken.

Of course only **white** girls were being allowed to do this sort of work in the mills of Lowell.

By way of extreme contrast, as of this Year of Our Lord 1817 there still existed real misogyny.  

Nature intended women to be our slaves.... They are our property, we are not theirs.... They belong to us, just as a tree which bears fruit belongs to the gardener. What a mad idea to demand equality for women!.... Women are nothing but machines for producing children.

In this year in the state of New York, giving suck to her slave baby Diana, the baby machine/slave woman Isabella (Sojourner Truth) would have been approximately 20 years old. By the end of this year, in exile on St. Helena, the famous prisoner and misogynist who made the above comment, Napoléon Bonaparte, would be exhibiting symptoms of serious illness.

Misogyny was not, of course, our only problem. There was also, for instance, anti-Semitism. In this year Uriah Phillips Levy was commissioned a Lieutenant in the US Navy. As our Navy’s solitary Jewish officer, he would soon be court-martialed three times in quick succession: his commanding officers were doing everything they could think of to “get” him. But Lieutenant Uriah would as we shall see prove to be a persistent sort of person....

41. Speaking of slaves and misogyny, Saartje Baartman, known to publicity as the “Hottentot Venus,” died in this year of complications of alcoholism and the **small pox**, giving to the Baron Georges Jean-Léopold-Nicolas-Frédéric Cuvier his eagerly awaited opportunity to dissect her genitals and write them up in the Mémoires du museum d’histoire naturelle. Wasn’t it white of these nice people, to have waited until she died of natural causes rather than merely “sacrifice” her to the cause of inter-racial understanding?
Winter: Napoléon, safely quarantined from the world on St. Helena in the remote Atlantic, was one evening glancing through the fake biography of himself which had been issued anonymously in 1815, and was finding himself heartily amused. The bio had been entitled:

**AMOURS SECRETTES DE NAPOLEON BUONAPARTE**

Not one to kiss and tell, he insisted he had sexually “known” none of the women mentioned:

> They make a Hercules of me!

(This might be the point at which to mention that none of the literature authored by various of Napoleon’s captors make any mention whatever of giant tortoises, and I have inspected a very great many period illustrations, including line drawings of him laboring in his St. Helena garden, and have been unable to find any one of them that depicts him as in the presence of any giant tortoise or other such lawn ornament. I have no assurance that there were as yet any of these giant tortoises from the islands of the Indian Ocean present on St. Helena at any point during the famous man’s captivity there. The original tortoises on this lawn most certainly did not include Jonathan, the famous one, and there does not seem to be any record as to in what year these original tortoises were brought onto this isolated island.)

42. While Napoleon Bonaparte was on St. Helena, it was once suspected, the Brit attendants had been quite systematically poisoned him with arsenic, gradually building up the dosage. These conspiracy theories attributed all signs of old age, such as Bonaparte’s growing stoutness and feebleness, to this poisoning, which had been quite evident in body samples from his corpse. Obviously someone as important as Napoleon would otherwise be above aging the way other ordinary people do! But then someone went and checked the wallpaper in the house he had been living in on St. Helena, the conspiracy theories about a deliberate poisoning quite collapsed. It had been stupid, really, for if one wants to poison someone, the very last thing one would do would be to challenge their system with gradually increasing levels of one’s poison of choice, because that would tend to build up an immunity rather than a susceptibility. —But the flakes that were still falling off the ceiling and walls of Napoleon’s dining area were still quite laden with arsenic even at the late date on which someone thought to make these tests. More recently, the same conspiracy theories sprang up while Clare Booth Luce was our ambassador to Italy during the 1950s. She was discovered to be suffering from arsenic poisoning, and it turned out to be the very old wallpaper in her study in Rome, which was flaking off into her breakfast.
There was another slave in the Dumont household in upstate New York, an older man named “Thomas” whose wife had died. The Dumonts married him to their 21-year-old “Isabella” (Sojourner Truth) with her little “bastard” child “Diana.” Although this man would father a number of children by “Isabella,” four of which would live past infancy, he would never acknowledge that he had married her.

In this year there would be an earthquake on St. Helena, lasting some 30 seconds.

Following an incident when a St. Helena white man was fined a statutory £2 for whipping his young slave girl, Hudson Lowe convened a meeting of the inhabitants, urging the abolition of slavery on the island; and so, as a 1st measure, all children born of a slave woman after Christmas Day were to be free (but considered as apprentices until the age of 18). Masters were also to enforce attendance of these free-born children at church and Sunday schools.
March 20, Saturday: In London, the shopping mall was being invented — Burlington Arcade began to offer “employment to industrious females” in boutiques “for the gratification of the public.”

The Governor of St. Helena having suggested that any slaves born on or after December 25, 1818 be manumitted and the former owner charged with the costs of their upbringing in consideration of the fact that although the island belonged to the East India Company it should conform with British government policy as well as may be, the governor’s plan was enacted into law. Owners would be allowed to reimburse themselves by indenturing the children to their service until the boys reached the age of 18 and the girls 16.

August 1, Sunday: King Friedrich Wilhelm III of Prussia and King Friedrich August I of Saxony met in reconciliation at Pillnitz.

The East India Company had, on the island of St. Helena in the south Atlantic, 700 to 800 Chinese workmen. They had divided into factions and began to struggle among themselves, with the whites on the island presuming this to amount to some sort of religious dispute. They formed, in Upper Jamestown near Plantation House where Napoléon Bonaparte was being kept, into three or four bands of about 150 each, and arming themselves with bamboo sticks, spears, knives, etc., “rushed upon each other with frightful ferocity ... uttering piercing cries.” The post at High Knoll despatched “some St. Helena sharp-shooters, for the most part drunk, all young lads who were impatient to finish the affair, and who, without waiting for anybody’s orders, started shooting wildly. There were some killed and a good many wounded. The commanding officers will be courtmartialed.”

The Coroner would report two deaths as “wilful murder” but the shooters would be acquitted.

Herman Melville was born as “Herman Melvill” at 6 Pearl Street on Manhattan “Island of the Hills,” in New-York, to importer Allan Melvill and Martia Gansevoort Melvill, daughter of Revolutionary War general Peter Gansevoort.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

1st day 1st of 8 M 1819 / Our Meeting was solid & D Buffum was favor’d in a lively & pertinent testimony to the efficacy of the Truth
In the Afternoon J Dennis Anne Greene & H Dennis were all engaged in short testimonies

43. It would not be until 1828 that “The Arcade” would be built in beautiful downtown Providence to offer employment to industrious Rhode Island females in boutiques for the gratification of the public.
September: New iron railings were erected “at considerable expense” at Government Garden on St. Helena (no mention is made of the presence of giant tortoises on this greensward at this time). It was forbidden to leave carts, or set up stalls to sell goods, at this fence.

The Middlesex Cattle Show, which Henry Thoreau usually would visit (and in 1860 he would be its principal speaker, with his “SUCCESSION OF FOREST TREES”).

**WALDEN**: Bankruptcy and repudiation are the spring-boards from which much of our civilization vaults and turns its somersets, but the savage stands on the unelastic plank of famine. Yet the Middlesex Cattle Show goes off here with *éclat* annually, as if all the joints of the agricultural machine were suent.

The farmer is endeavoring to solve the problem of a livelihood by a formula more complicated than the problem itself. To get his shoestrings he speculates in herds of cattle. With consummate skill he has set his trap with a hair spring to catch comfort and independence, and then, as he turned away, got his own leg into it. This is the reason he is poor; and for a similar reason we are all poor in respect to a thousand savage comforts, though surrounded by luxuries.

**WALDEN**: Ancient poetry and mythology suggest, at least, that husbandry was once a sacred art; but it is pursued with irreverent haste and heedlessness by us, our object being to have large farms and large crops merely. We have no festival, nor procession, nor ceremony, not excepting our Cattle-shows and so called Thanksgivings, by which the farmer expresses a sense of the sacredness of his calling, or is reminded of its sacred origin. It is the premium and the feast which tempt him. He sacrifices not to Ceres and the Terrestrial Jove, but to the infernal Plutus rather. By avarice and selfishness, and a grovelling habit, from which none of us is free, of regarding the soil as property, or the means of acquiring property chiefly, the landscape is deformed, husbandry is degraded with us, and the farmer leads the meanest of lives.
A WEEK: As I pass along the streets of our village of Concord on the
day of our annual Cattle-Show, when it usually happens that the leaves
of the elms and buttonwoods begin first to strew the ground under the
breath of the October wind, the lively spirits in their sap seem to
mount as high as any plough-boy’s let loose that day; and they lead my
thoughts away to the rustling woods, where the trees are preparing for
their winter campaign. This autumnal festival, when men are gathered
in crowds in the streets as regularly and by as natural a law as the
leaves cluster and rustle by the wayside, is naturally associated in
my mind with the fall of the year. The low of cattle in the streets
sounds like a hoarse symphony or running bass to the rustling of the
leaves. The wind goes hurrying down the country, gleaning every loose
straw that is left in the fields, while every farmer lad too appears
to scud before it, — having donned his best pea-jacket and pepper-and-
salt waistcoat, his unbent trousers, outstanding rigging of duck or
kerseymere or corduroy, and his furry hat withal, — to country fairs
and cattle-shows, to that Rome among the villages where the treasures
of the year are gathered. All the land over they go leaping the fences
with their tough, idle palms, which have never learned to hang by their
sides, amid the low of calves and the bleating of sheep, — Amos, Abner,
Elnathan, Elbridge, —

“From steep pine-bearing mountains to the plain.”

I love these sons of earth every mother’s son of them, with their great
hearty hearts rushing tumultuously in herds from spectacle to
spectacle, as if fearful lest there should not be time between sun and
sun to see them all, and the sun does not wait more than in haying-time.

“Wise Nature’s darlings, they live in the world
Perplexing not themselves how it is hurled.”

Running hither and thither with appetite for the coarse pastimes
of the day, now with boisterous speed at the heels of the inspired
negro from whose larynx the melodies of all Congo and Guinea Coast
have broke loose into our streets; now to see the procession of
a hundred yoke of oxen, all as august and grave as Osiris, or
the droves of neat cattle and milch cows as unspotted as Isis or Io.
Such as had no love for Nature

“at all,
Came lovers home from this great festival.”

They may bring their fattest cattle and richest fruits to the fair,
but they are all eclipsed by the show of men. These are stirring autumn
days, when men sweep by in crowds, amid the rustle of leaves,
like migrating finches; this is the true harvest of the year, when the
air is but the breath of men, and the rustling of leaves is as the
trampling of the crowd. We read now-a-days of the ancient festivals,
games, and processions of the Greeks and Etruscans, with a little
incredulity, or at least with little sympathy; but how natural
and irrepressible in every people is some hearty and palpable greeting
of Nature. The Corybantes, the Bacchantes, the rude primitive
tragedians with their procession and goat-song, and the whole
paraphernalia of the Panathenae, which appear so antiquated and
peculiar, have their parallel now. The husbandman is always a better
Greek than the scholar is prepared to appreciate, and the old custom still survives, while antiquarians and scholars grow gray in commemorating it. The farmers crowd to the fair to-day in obedience to the same ancient law, which Solon or Lycurgus did not enact, as naturally as bees swarm and follow their queen.

It is worth the while to see the country's people, how they pour into the town, the sober farmer folk, now all agog, their very shirt and coat-collars pointing forward, — collars so broad as if they had put their shirts on wrong end upward, for the fashions always tend to superfluity, — and with an unusual springiness in their gait, jabbering earnestly to one another. The more supple vagabond, too, is sure to appear on the least rumor of such a gathering, and the next day to disappear, and go into his hole like the seventeen-year locust, in an ever-shabby coat, though finer than the farmer's best, yet never dressed; come to see the sport, and have a hand in what is going, — to know "what's the row," if there is any; to be where some men are drunk, some horses race, some cockerels fight; anxious to be shaking props under a table, and above all to see the "striped pig." He especially is the creature of the occasion. He empties both his pockets and his character into the stream, and swims in such a day. He dearly loves the social slush. There is no reserve of sobriety in him.

I love to see the herd of men feeding heartily on coarse and succulent pleasures, as cattle on the husks and stalks of vegetables. Though there are many crooked and crabbled specimens of humanity among them, run all to thorn and rind, and crowded out of shape by adverse circumstances, like the third chestnut in the burr, so that you wonder to see some heads wear a whole hat, yet fear not that the race will fail or waver in them; like the crabs which grow in hedges, they furnish the stocks of sweet and thrifty fruits still. Thus is nature recruited from age to age, while the fair and palatable varieties die out, and have their period. This is that mankind. How cheap must be the material of which so many men are made.
The Reverend David Collie finished his preparatory work for missionary activity at the town of Gosport, in Hampshire on the south coast of England, and was ordained. The London Missionary Society would be packing him and his wife off toward Malacca in India. Although his wife would die at Madras during the journey out, he would become Professor of Chinese at an Anglo-Chinese College that was just in the process of establishing itself in Malacca. His name in Chinese would be 高大衛牧師.

On St. Helena, Parson Boys offered some sort of remark in the course of a sermon that, unfortunately, failed to meet with the approval of the East India Company’s governor of the island (presumably, the parson had been somehow misled, and had supposed that there was such a thing as freedom of religion, or freedom of worship, or freedom of speech, or something on that order, that would allow him to disagree with those in power without facing retribution). What part of “tight little island” was it that the parson hadn’t understood?
May 5, Saturday: The Journal des débats announced that Luigi Cherubini and Adrien Boieldieu, among others, had been named Chevaliers in the Order of St. Michael.

At Longwood on remote St. Helena in the billows of the Atlantic Ocean, after years and years, the emeritus emperor and troublemaker Napoléon Bonaparte finally kicked the bucket, due to gastric cancer. (This was a great relief for one of his Brit guards, a Captain Marryat, because under the enforced idleness of this long-term guard duty the officer had been fantasizing a plot by the boys in Brazil to rescue his prisoner by submarine, and embarrass him the way the British Commissioner Sir Neil Campbell had been embarrassed in 1815 on Elba in the Mediterranean.)

If you look carefully at the back of this depiction, you will see that the wallpaper has a star pattern. Here is a surviving sample of this very wallpaper. It has tested extremely high in arsenic. It would now appear that the health of everyone living in that house had been being challenged by flakes of arsenic falling off the old wallpaper. A sample of Napoleon’s hair, for instance, has tested high for arsenic. –But, you see, this is not evidence that anyone was attempting to poison him, as in that period this sort of wallpaper had been rather common, and anyway, he had been taking a medication that included arsenic as one of its ingredients.

45. So no, Napoleon had not been poisoned by his British captors. The only real mystery of his life is why it was that such a capable man could not have lived a life that amounted to something. When Charles-Maurice Talleyrand would hear of this death, for instance, his comment would be “Not an event, more a news-item.”
With the former emperor of the French no longer a target for their attentions, most of the Brit troops were sent away and Hudson Lowe was free to sail back home to jolly old England.

May 6, Sunday: There are tourist guidebooks that will tell you that on this day, the day after the death of Napoléon Bonaparte on St. Helena, Jonathan the giant tortoise was born. Don’t believe this! For instance, on page 66 of Lia Ditton’s 50 WATER ADVENTURES TO DO BEFORE YOU DIE (A&C Black, 2015), we notice the following material:

A visit to Longwood House, where the French Emperor Napoleon Bonaparte spent his final years in exile in the early 19th century, will leave you debating whether Napoleon could really have died from the arsenic in the wallpaper. Visit the tombstone that marks the spot where he was buried until his body was exhumed, and say hello to Jonathan, the giant waist-high tortoise who was born in 1821, on the day after Napoleon died. Considered one of the oldest, if not the oldest living reptile on earth, you may be surprised to discover that Jonathan is still pretty active particularly with the three other Seychelles
Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

1st day 6th of 5 M / Our Meetings were both Silent, to me seasons of some exercise, some favor & some leanness. –

May 9, Wednesday: The remains of Napoléon Bonaparte were interred on St. Helena.
July: It was discovered that a number of oak trees at Plantation on St. Helena were dying because of white worm infestation.

Sir Walter Scott had returned to London in order to be present at the coronation of King George IV.

July 25, Wednesday: Lieutenant-General Sir Hudson Lowe, no longer needed on St. Helena due to the demise of Napoléon Bonaparte, resigned as governor.
March 11, Tuesday: Brigadier-General Alexander Walker was appointed as governor of St. Helena.

The 1st normal school in the United States of America, the “Concord Academy” or “Columbian School,” opened at Concord Corners, Vermont on the New Hampshire border. Its master was the Reverend Samuel Read Hall.

October 2, Thursday: Robert F. Seale was offered £400 for his model of the island of St. Helena at the scale of a foot to a mile. This measured 10ft 6in X 6ft 8in.

In Newport, Rhode Island, Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

5th day 2nd of 10th M 1823 / This day Jonathon Nichols and Sister Elizabeth Rodman Solemnized their marriage. The Meeting was very

46 A “normal school” is a school where high school graduates train to become primary school teachers (such a service is now provided by the “Department of Education” of a college). In 19th-Century-speak the institution was “normal” because it established a “norm,” an elevated uniform standard. By the way, those who can do, those who can’t teach, and those who can’t teach teach others how to teach.
large, being attended by many of what is called the gentry of the Town — a part of the sitting was solemn, but so many present who were not acquainted with either our mode of Worship, or Marriage, occasioned some stir in the forepart of the Meeting, also at the conclusion—. The Meeting, which was held in silence, excepting a Short address from J Dennis explaining the necessity of quietude to the Multitude.—

Divers of our friends went to the house to the Wedding, among whom was our Ancient & beloved friend David Buffum & his wife, & to me it was a pleasant Afternoon. Brother Jonathon & Sister Elizabeth, felt nearer to me than they had ever done —They conducted with true dignity of manners — I have no doubt they will do well, at least their desire is to do well & if they do well, they will be blessed. —

October 6, Monday: The 802-foot stone aqueduct over the Genesee River, constructed by David Stanhope Bates, opened in Rochester.

The East India Company government of the island of St. Helena found Robert F. Seale’s model of their island at the scale of a foot to a mile to be highly worthy, in fact considering it to be so dangerously accurate that it was a potential risk to the island’s security — the governor needed to make sure this would not be glimpsed by wicked foreign eyes.

In Newport, Rhode Island, Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

2nd day Morning 6th of 10 M 1823 / Br Jonathon & Sister Elizabeth set out for their home this morning at 9 OC. — I could not go up to take leave of them — I felt too much to admit of my doing it without emotion — I desire their welfare & have no doubt they desire ours. —
May 27, Thursday: Robert F. Seale was awarded £500 for his model of the island of St. Helena at the scale of a foot to a mile, by the East India Company government. Mr. Seale pointed out, however, that since he needed another year to complete the work, £500 would be an inadequate remuneration.

In Newport, Rhode Island, Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

5th day 27th of 5 M / At our Moy [Monthly] Meeting this day held in town we had the company of Walter Allen Thos Howland & Nicholas Congdon who were part of a Committee from the Meeting for Sufferings to make provision for friends at the Yearly Meeting time — The first meeting was nearly silent, & perhaps it might as well have been quite so, but I feel tender in judging. — In the last the business went on well. — Nicholas Congdon Benj Freeborn & wife, Sarah Greene, wife of Jos dined with us, & after dinner I met with the YMs committee on the subject of making provision, & made arrangements for the purpose. — N Congdon lodged with us.
August: Frederick Douglass was sent to live on Lloyd Plantation, Wye River, at the home of his master, Aaron Anthony.

A proposal that a special tax be levied on “free Blacks” was rejected by Governor Brigadier-General Alexander Walker because “the law cannot recognise distinctions of colour.” This would not be wrong in principle but would amount to the creation of an administrative nightmare: given the extent of race mixing that had already taken place on St. Helena, it would be inordinately difficult to determine whether to tax or not tax many of these individual freemen.
The prison created by the East India Company on its waystation St. Helena in 1683 was at this point replaced with a new such facility (the site is to this day in use as a prison).

Sir Walter Scott’s 9-volume Life of Napoleon. The author had a reception at the Theatrical Fund dinner and there Lord Meadowbank, with his consent, revealed that he was the author also of the anonymous series of popular novels Waverley, The Bride of Lammermoor, Ivanhoe, Rob Roy, Guy Mannering, The Heart of Midlothian, etc.
January 3, Wednesday: Robert F. Seale’s model of the island of St. Helena was placed at Addiscombe, and over and above the £500 already disbursed, he was awarded an additional £500.

Per the journal of Albert Gallatin’s son James as recorded in The Diary of James Gallatin:

The “rout” for all of our compatriots last night was as
successful as any “rout” can be; to be several hours sitting in a coach before arriving at the door of one’s destination; then to crawl up about three or four steps every half-hour; to be stifled and toes trodden upon; to make a bow to your hosts; to edge one’s way through the crowd; to drink hot champagne and secure an ice down one’s back. Then to start one’s journey back again. If this spells pleasure, then a “rout” is pleasant. We indeed take our pleasures oddly.

“Crockford’s,” the magnificent new gambling-hell in St. James’s Street, was opened yesterday. Pozzo di Borgo, Prince Esterhazy, the Duke of Wellington, Talleyrand, &c. &c., all belong to it. Pozzo took me under his wing. It was very fine. Supper lavish. It is to be the fashionable gambling resort of the aristocracy.

April: Most of the agriculture of Mission San Juan Capistrano was by this point taking place, of necessity, along the Santa Ana River, for the area close around the mission had been devastated by two generations of deforestation and the consequent erosion and flash floods and desertification. The place was coming to look more and more like Spain. At this point there was a work stoppage among the Juaneño acolytes or serfs obligated to these fields “and the guards had to be increased to prevent breakouts.”

A long standing practice at St. Helena was to fire cannon at any ship attempting to enter James Bay without prior permission. The need to seek permission was however much overlooked by ship’s captains. This resulted in a shot being frequently fired from one of the north east batteries at ships heading for the anchorage. Attempts were made to remind merchant shipping companies of the risks which accompanied any approach without prior permission.
June: On St. Helena, “The Briars” was purchased by the East India Company for £6,000. The property would be used as a silk-worm establishment and for growing mulberry trees.

Per the journal of Albert Gallatin’s son James as recorded in The Diary of James Gallatin:

Took Frances to Kew Gardens this afternoon. Flowers and plants beautiful. Dinner at the French Embassy. Glad to see some of my old Paris friends. Mr. Canning more and more odd in his manner. Lord Goderich had a long interview with father this morning.
An Observatory was created on Ladder Hill and fitted with astronomical instruments. A tramway was built up to the facility by Lieutenant Mellis and the St. Helena Artillery.

February: The inaugural issue of the Cherokee Nation newspaper Tsa la gi Tsu lehisanunhi or Cherokee Phoenix, the 1st native American newspaper in the United States, was printed in both English and Cherokee. Sequoyah had devised his Cherokee symbol set in 1821.47

On St. Helena a plan to cover over part of “The Run” met with opposition due to fear that the danger of flooding would be thereby increased.

April 14, Monday: Brigadier-General Alexander Walker resigned as the governor of St. Helena.

At Newgate prison in London a healthy 24-year-old woman, Catherine Walsh, was hanged because she had killed her 6-week-old infant. This would be a treasure for the Royal College of Surgeons — a fit young female body to dissect (they would make the most careful drawings, and these still exist).

### Other Women Hanged in England During 1828

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Place of execution</th>
<th>Crime</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>17/03</td>
<td>Mary Magrath</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>Dundalk</td>
<td>Murder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22/03</td>
<td>Jane Scott</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>Lancaster Castle</td>
<td>Murder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>08/08</td>
<td>Elizabeth Commins</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>Badmin</td>
<td>Murder of child</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16/08</td>
<td>Ann Harris</td>
<td></td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Murder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22/10</td>
<td>Isabella Mc Menamy</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>Glasgow</td>
<td>Robbery &amp; assault</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

> 2nd day 14th of 4 M / Today we had a friendly call from Job Otis of New Bedford on his way to NYork. – our interview was pleasant & to me interesting. –

47. Note: This symbol set is a syllabary, as in Arabic and Hebrew and, perhaps, Chinese and Japanese, rather than an alphabet.
April 29, Tuesday: Brigadier-General Charles Dallas of the East India Company, who had retired from the Madras army during December 1827, became governor of St. Helena.

Friend Stephen Wanton Gould wrote in his journal:

4th M 29th - 3rd day / This Morng in company with other friends on board & David Buffum in comapny we set out for Greenwich to attend the Quarterly Meeting & were seven hours on board the boat, but had a very pleasant passage. — on our arrival we went immediately in to Daniel Howlands where we were kindly recd

May: Governor Brigadier-General Charles Dallas ordered that the munitions store of St. Helena be relocated outside of Jamestown, on Ladder Hill.

A negrero flying the Spanish flag (as depicted below), the Almirante, master Castro, D., on its first of two known Middle Passages, out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of 650 enslaved Africans, arrived at the port of Banes, Cuba.
September: Governor Brigadier-General Charles Dallas proposed the building of an inclined plane, “Jacob’s Ladder,” on St. Helena.

A negrero flying the Spanish flag (as shown below), the Fama de Cadiz, master Igartua, M., on its one and only known Middle Passage, arrived at its destination, Cuba.
May 18, Monday: Niblo’s Garden opened at Broadway and Prince Street in New-York.

According to an almanac of the period, “Peruvian Frigate Prueba destroyed by fire in the harbour of Guayaquil, and a considerable number of persons killed.”

(On the following screen is a slice of real life, from the island of St. Helena.)
TO BE SOLD & LET
BY PUBLIC AUCTION,
On MONDAY the 18th of MAY, 1829,
UNDER THE TREES.

FOR SALE,
THE THREE FOLLOWING
SLAVES,

YIZ.
HANNIBAL, about 30 Years old, an excellent House Servant, of Good Character.
WILLIAM, about 35 Years old, a Labourer.
NANCY, an excellent House Servant and Nurse.

TO BE LET,
On the usual conditions of the Hirer finding them in Food, Cloth, and Medical

MALE and FEMALE
SLAVES,

OF GOOD CHARACTER.
ROBERT BAGLEY, about 20 Years old, a good House Servant.
WILLIAM BAGLEY, about 18 Years old, a Labourer.
JOHN ARMS, about 18 Years old.
JACK ANTONIA, about 40 Years old, a Labourer.
PHILIP, an Excellent Fisherman.
HARRY, about 27 Years old, a good House Servant.
LUCY, a Young Woman of good Character, used in House Work and the Nursery.
ELIZA, an Excellent Washerwoman.
CLARA, an Excellent Washerwoman.
FANNY, about 14 Years old, House Servant.
SARAH, about 14 Years old, House Servant.

Also for Sale, at Eleven o’Clock,

AT ONE O’CLOCK, THAT CELEBRATED ENGLISH HORSE
BLUCHER,
December: The inclined plane, “Jacob’s Ladder,” that had been proposed for St. Helena a year earlier by Governor Brigadier-General Charles Dallas was completed.

In India, the council of Lord William Bentinek abolished suttee, the practice of throwing widows alive onto the funeral bonfires of the bodies of their dead husbands.

The act was to be published simultaneously in English and Bengali, and needed to be provided an effective and literate translation. The Reverend William Carey received the order from Henry Shakespeare, secretary of the government, on the morning of the Lord’s Day, just before going into the pulpit to preach, but since each day of delay in the proclamation of the act would probably cost the lives of two widows, he did not go into the pulpit but instantly commenced his translation, and was able to complete it before the fall of night.
In this decade candles formed of *spermacetti*, a whale-derived wax, would be replacing candles made from the tallow of sheep and cattle.

The increasing price of whale oil for central wick lamps had led at this point to the widespread substitution of lard oil, and at this point also was introduced a volatile, explosive mixture of turpentine and alcohol termed “camphene.” Such fuels could be utilized in lamps with one burner, or could be utilized in lamps with two burners if the burners were angled away from one another. The wicks of such lamps needed to be kept capped when the lamps were not in use. Camphene would pass out of use in about 1850. In this year, also, there was the introduction of “colza” oil made from rape seed, which would be the principal fuel for the oil lamps of America until the 1860s, and of paraffin, which was discovered simultaneously in this year by Reichenbach and by Dr. Christenson.

For the following four decades, St. Helena would be functioning as the center of the whaling industry in the South Atlantic, with as many as 1,000 whaling vessels stopping by each year, and so it would have resident consuls both from the United States and from Norway.

According to Dr. Edward Jarvis’s TRADITIONS AND REMINISCENCES OF CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS 1779-1878, page 75:

> Until about 1830, there were tin lanterns. They were mere cylinder, pierced with numberless holes about a quarter of an inch long. The light of the candle shone feebly through, but the wind could not penetrate, as the holes were punched from within outward. From 1830, we had glass lanterns, globular, conical, cylindrical and other forms made to hold small oil lamps, now improved for kerosene oil.
About this date the wooden picket-fence that had inclosed St. John’s Park, at Hudson, Laight, Varick, and Beach streets, was replaced with iron. This property was held in common by the abutting owners, and was availed of solely by them, each being in possession of a key wherewith to enter it. For many years the neighborhood was one of the very highly aristocratic portions of the city. In 1869 this Park was purchased by Captain Vanderbilt in behalf of the New York Central & Hudson River R.R., and on it were erected store-houses for a freight station and depot. There were... several public or roadside houses, which were daily frequented by the gentlemen who kept horses and wagons. These were that of John Snediker on the Jamaica Road, celebrated for his asparagus dinners; “Nick” Vandyne’s, on the hill at Flatbush, where the widow dispensed liquors and gossip; it was at Cato’s that the horsemen of the day convened, notably Captain Cornelius Vanderbilt, the Pearsalls, Richard T. Carman, Edward Minturn, John and Gerard Coster, and a host of others; Widow Bradshaw’s, corner of One Hundred and Twenty-fifth Street and Third Avenue, whose chicken fricasses were universally acknowledged to be a marvel, and an "institution"; they were as well known as Mrs. Dominy’s "chunk apple" and clam pot-pies at Fire Island. In an earlier chapter I have adverted to the primitive methods employed in striking a light. About this period, however, there was introduced a brimstone match, which was so universally used that children sold them in the streets, with as much persistency of application as they now practice in vending newspapers. These matches were made of narrow pine-wood shavings, planed off in a manner so as to form a spiral, cut in lengths of about five inches, and their ends dipped in melted sulphur. The Manhattan Gas Light Company was incorporated with a capital of five hundred thousand dollars to supply the upper part of the island. Thomas M. Jackson, colored, opened in this year an oyster-cellar and restaurant at 47 Howard Street, west of Broadway; it was a favorite and very popular resort, and deservedly so, as he kept good articles and was very civil and attentive to his customers. He also was popular as a caterer for public and private festivities. The first locomotive in this country, before referred to, was forwarded from this city and operated on a road in South Carolina. The Christian Intelligencer was established in this year as the newspaper of the Dutch Reformed Church. In this year, and for several years after, the formation and operation of boat clubs became very popular with our young men; our boat-builders were taxed to fill the demands for long, narrow, and highly finished boats, usually for eight oars; the “Barge,” the property of a club of young men of our extreme ton, was double-banked and eight-oared. The absence of ferry-boats, barges, tows, and tow-boats, compared with those of a later day, rendered rowing in the evening safely practicable, and New Brighton, Thatched House at Paulus Hook, Hoboken, Elysian Fields, Bull’s Ferry, and Fort Lee were visited.

48. The “Paulus Hook” mentioned here later became Jersey City.
June: When the schooner *St. Helena* used by the East India Company’s government of *St. Helena* was captured by pirates, they eliminated the crew by tying pairs back to back and shoving them over the rail.

A *negro* flying the Spanish flag (as shown below), the *Emilia*, master F. Lescaya, on its one and only known Middle Passage, had started with a cargo of 210 enslaved Africans out of Kalabari but arrived during this month at Havana, Cuba with only 192 for 18 had died in transit.

July 15, Friday night: *St. Helena*’s theatre was destroyed by fire.
July: A *negrero* flying the Portuguese flag, the *Hebe*, master Almeida, J. de, on its one and only known *Middle Passage*, delivered a cargo of 401 *enslaved* Africans at the port of Havana, Cuba.

According to a census the *slave* population on *St. Helena* was 645 and its value was being estimated at £28,062, assuming that slaves 55 or over were worth about £2.20 each more or less, that those aged between 50 and 55 were worth about £24.25 each more or less, that those between 45 and 50 were worth about £36.70 each more or less, and that the 500 slaves who were under 45 years of age were worth about £51.50 each more or less. If the East India Company desired to abolish slavery on the island, such estimates needed to be mandated as compensation rates to the slaves’ owners. One-fifth of this population would be emancipated during this year, and one-fifth during each of the succeeding four years.

By the completion of this buy-out program the government would have purchased and *manumitted* a total of 614 individuals for a grand sum total expenditure of £28,062. 17s. Od.
November: The St. Helena Railway Co. sold the inclined plane known as “Jacob’s Ladder” to the East India Company for £882.50.

The American Colonization Society made its studied response to the accusations William Lloyd Garrison had been publishing against it:

“It is not right that men should possess that freedom, for which they are entirely unprepared, which can only prove injurious to themselves and others.”
Under the British Parliament’s 3&4 Will IV c. 73 (An act for the abolition of slavery throughout the British colonies, for promoting the industry of the manumitted slaves, and for compensating the persons hitherto entitled to the services of such slaves; the so-called “Emancipation act”), slavery had been abolished in British colonies as of August 1, 1834 with the exceptions of India and St. Helena. The some 800,000 former slaves were until 1840 to be held as compulsory “apprentices,” indentured servants, and their former owners were to be compensated to the tune of over £20,000,000.

One out of every five slaves on the island of St. Helena had been purchased by the East India Company during the previous year, and granted manumission papers. During this year an additional one out of every five would be put through this process. By the completion of this buy-out program the government would have processed a total of 614 individuals for a grand sum total expenditure of £28,062. 17s. Od.

In a voyage to the islands of the South Seas, Friend Milo Calkins of the Nantucket Island whaler Independence had his mind opened up to an entirely different conception of the past, the present, and the future of humankind. “Many of my preconceived notions imbibed from my sectarian teachings were swept away and my faith in others badly shaken,” he would write with frankness.

On St. Helena, a subscription offer for the setting up of a whale fishery attracted £1,000 of investment.
August 28, Wednesday: Under the India Act, the island of St. Helena was no longer to be ruled by the Honourable East India Company, but from April 22, 1834, by His Majesty’s Government.

Subsequent to the passage of the Abolition of the Slave Trade Act by Parliament, British captains who had been being caught continuing in these international business activities had been being fined £100 for every slave found on board their vessel. However, this 1807 law had by no means been effective in halting British participation in the international slave trade — because, when slavers were in danger of being overtaken by the British navy, their captains could sometimes reduce the fines by having the cargo of blacks shoved off the other side of the vessel, to be dragged under the waves by their chains.

Some involved in the anti-trade campaign found themselves therefore arguing that to end this cruel practice the entire traffic in humans must be outlawed, and in 1823 a new Anti-Slavery Society had been formed.
Members had included Friend Thomas Clarkson, Henry Peter Brougham, William Wilberforce, and Thomas Fowell Buxton. On this day Parliament passed the Slavery Abolition Act. This act manumitted all slaves anywhere in the British Empire (such as, for instance, in our neighbor to the north, Canada) under the age of six years with the British government itself to pay full compensation to the deprived slavemasters. All slaves in the West Indies already above the age of six were by this act to be bound as apprentices for a term of 5 to 7 years (this would be reduced to 2 years), to be followed by their manumission. Said liberation was scheduled to begin on August 1, 1834 with the last batch of slaves to receive their manumission papers by August 1, 1838. As a condition of their cooperation the white “owners” of these 700,000 black and red workers were to receive some £20,000,000 sterling in compensation. (For instance, the Bishop of Exeter alone, with 665 slaves to manumit, would receive £12,700 in compensation out of the government’s tax revenues.)
September: By an Act of Parliament St. Helena Island and all other property of the East India Company was transferred to The Crown of England.

A negro flying the Spanish flag (as shown below), the *Alerta*, master A. Ferreira, out of an unknown area of Africa on one of its four known Middle Passage voyages, arrived at the port of Havana, Cuba with a cargo of 760 enslaved Africans.
During a controlled test undertaken at Woolwich Arsenal, British soldiers fired 6,000 rounds from a Brown Bess musket and 6,000 from a comparable percussion shoulder weapon and recorded that the Brown Bess had misfired 26 times more often. This statistic would motivate the British government to begin replacing its Brown Besses.

James Gillespie Birney manumitted all the slaves whom he had inherited.

Since he had become persuaded of the fact that any gradual emancipation would merely stimulate the interstate slave trade, and since he had become persuaded that the dangers of a mixed labour system were greater than those of a straightforward emancipation, he formally repudiated all colonization projects and abandoned the Whig party. He delivered anti-slavery addresses in the North, accepted the vice-presidency of the American Anti-Slavery Society, and announced that his intention was to establish in the following year an anti-slavery journal in Danville. Kentucky society began to shun him. No one would grant him access to a public hall for a lecture and no printer would publish him. Such materials as he was able to get printed, such as ON THE SIN OF HOLDING SLAVES and LETTER ON COLONIZATION, and in the following year VINDICATION OF ABOLITIONISTS, were confiscated by the Southern postmasters.

By this year two out of every five slaves on the island of St. Helena had been purchased by the East India Company, and granted manumission papers. During this year an additional one out of every five would be put through this process. By the completion of this buy-out program the government would have processed a total of 614 individuals for a grand sum total expenditure of £28,062. 17s. Od.
January: Fifteen slave ships (negreros) captured by the Royal Navy were being held in James Bay.

During this month three Spanish negreros, the Carlota, master G. Loureiro, on its only known Middle Passage, the Francisca, master M. Martorell, on one of its five known Middle Passages, and the Belencita, master S. Alonzo, on one of its four known Middle Passages, were arriving in Cuban waters, loaded with an unknown number of new black slaves from unknown points along the African coastline.

April 22, Tuesday: Great Britain, France, Spain and Portugal formed the Quadruple Alliance to support liberal governments in Iberia and to deter the Holy Alliance of Russia, Prussia, and Austria.

Although formally His Majesty’s Government took over the island of St. Helena, in fact by agreement Brigadier-General Charles Dallas of the East India Company continued for the time being as acting governor.
April 23, Wednesday: At the top of Ladder Hill, the Royal Standard was hoisted over the island of St. Helena (everybody got all misty-eyed).

David Henry Thoreau checked out, from Harvard Library, the 1st volume of the Reverend Vicesimus Knox II, D.D.'s ELEGANT EXTRACTS: OR, USEFUL AND ENTERTAINING PIECES OF POETRY, SELECTED FOR THE IMPROVEMENT OF YOUNG PERSONS: BEING SIMILAR IN DESIGN TO ELEGANT EXTRACTS IN PROSE (London: C. Robinson; Weybridge: S. Hamilton?, 1800). He also checked out an unidentified volume labeled both “Lewis & Clapperton” and “10.1.4.” This volume, the first of a series, may have consisted of some publication by Meriwether Lewis and/or some publication by Hugh Clapperton (such as the JOURNAL OF A SECOND EXPEDITION INTO THE INTERIOR OF AFRICA which he had published in London in 1829), bound together or put out as a series of volumes.

November: In London, the menagerie was removed from the Tower of London.

On St. Helena, a new road was cut above Two Gun Saddle.

The 3d issue of Harvard College’s undergraduate subscription literary magazine, the HARVARDIANA:

- “Rejected Addresses” by “W”
- “A Fragment” by “Supernumerus”
- “Biography — Plutarch” by “Gamma”
- “Confessions of a Bashful Man” by “O D R”
- “Extract from an Unpublished Poem” by “H”
- “Love in a Steamboat”
- “Remarks on the Writings of Crabbe” by “B O”
- “Simple Pleasures”
- “The Oasis” by “Mrs Child”
Concluding that emigration to Haiti indeed did offer the best alternative for his immediate family and for free mulattoes generally, the white Florida planter Zephaniah Kingsley carried out a colonization plan for his black and mixed-race family, by sending a son and other freed blacks ahead of him, to start a settlement on that Caribbean island. He would join them, bringing his black wife Anna Kingsley and other dependents, a year later. Eventually at least 53 of his former slaves would follow. A nine-year period of indentured servitude would end with manumission for these people, but other of Kingsley’s black slaves would remain on his Florida plantations — laboring in the sun to support this lovely little experiment in racial harmony.

By this year three out of every five slaves on the island of St. Helena had been purchased by the East India Company, and granted manumission papers. During this year an additional fifth would be put through the process. By the completion of this buy-out program during the following year the government would have processed a total of 614 individuals for a grand sum total expenditure of £28,062. 17s. Od.
The US Federal Congress passed a resolution stating that it has no authority over state slavery laws.

“It is simply crazy that there should ever have come into being a world with such a sin in it, in which a man is set apart because of his color — the superficial fact about a human being. Who could want such a world? For an American fighting for his love of country, that the last hope of earth should from its beginning have swallowed slavery, is an irony so withering, a justice so intimate in its rebuke of pride, as to measure only with God.”

— Stanley Cavell, MUST WE MEAN WHAT WE SAY? 1976, page 141

By this year four out of every five slaves on the island of St. Helena had been purchased by the East India Company, and granted manumission papers. During this year the final fifth would be put through the process. At the completion of this buy-out program the government had processed a total of 614 individuals for a grand sum total expenditure of £28,062. 17s. Od.

At the East India Company prison on St. Helena it was costing 4 shillings 8 pence per week to feed a prisoner, except that the ones on a rice and water punitive diet could be fed for merely 3 shillings 6 pence:

From the great increase of prisoners the Gaol is not sufficiently capacious to allow of any classification, and consequently the most notorious characters are mixed with children and others who are imprisoned for trivial offences and there are no means of inflicting solitary confinement in any way sufficient to make it efficacious, no Officer of the Prison resides within it and the prisoners after night may commit any offences upon each other, or suffer illness without the probability of their being heard — Five persons are confined in one Cell, some of which are only 10 feet in length & width. In summer the heat is intolerable, and 4 out of the 7 Cells being under ground are subject to damps from the run of Water, passing near the Prison and finding vent through the earth, to the walls. ... The Prison is also so constructed that every facility is afforded for self-destruction, of which three instances have occurred in a few years.
In what is now South Africa, Boer farmers angry at the British abolition of slavery in the colonies continue to move north and east, founding the Orange Free State, Natal, and Transvaal.

In this year and the next, Friend Joseph Sturge, a prosperous Quaker grain dealer of Birmingham, England, would be visiting the West Indies to learn the effects of the statute of Aug. 28, 1833, that had de jure emancipated the slaves of the British colonies but had substituted an easily abused “apprenticeship” system.

“EMANCIPATION IN THE ... INDIES....”: The recent testimonies of Sturge, of Thome and Kimball, of Gurney, of Philippo, are very explicit on this point, the capacity and the success of the colored and the black population in employments of skill, of profit, and of trust; and, best of all, is the testimony to their moderation.

February: The astronomical instruments of the St. Helena Observatory were dismantled and packed off to Canada (the island’s Time Office would of course retain some of the timepieces).

Early this year, perhaps in about this period, Jones Very was concluding that there was only one way in which evil could enter this universe of God’s, and that was through human deliberation. For to allow oneself to be tempted is the same as to allow oneself to sin. What would be requisite, therefore, would be to establish a state of artlessness and immediacy which precluded all “taking thought,” all deliberation. Since he needed to “converse with Heaven,” he determined that upon his graduation he would attempt this feat of spontaneity at Harvard Divinity School.

We cannot predict our actions as if we were machines. If we are growing in virtue we shall not say what we should do in any particular case but say if the case comes I will do something then which I do not know now. The spirit will tell us in that hour.
February 24, Wednesday: It was the end of an era. The East India Company was no more. The Company flag was lowered and replaced by the Standard of Great Britain, and Brigadier-General Charles Dallas of the East India Company, who had continued as acting governor of the island after its takeover by the Crown on April 22, 1834, was out of a job. Major-General George Middlemore took office in the name of King William IV as the initial Crown governor of St. Helena (Middlemore would be “long remembered for his bad manners and his discourtesy,” and for his unenviable task of making savage spending cuts and sacking former Company servants).

In Boston, Winslow Homer was born.

49. Which, one might suppose, would be an expertise similar to that of the ventriloquist who could speak while his dummy was drinking a glass of water. Or something like that, but never mind.
Waldo Emerson to his journal:

We are idealists whenever we prefer an idea to a sensation, as when we make personal sacrifices for the sake of freedom or religion... As character is more to us, our fellow men cease to exist to us in space and time, and we hold them by real ties. The idealist regards matter scientifically; the sensualist exclusively. The physical sciences are only well studied when they are explored for ideas. The moment the law is attained, i.e., the Idea, the memory disburthens herself of her centuries of observation. The book is always dear which has made us for moments idealists. That which can dissipate this block of earth into shining ether is genius. I have no hatred to the round earth and its gray mountains. I see well enough the sand-hill opposite my window. I see with as much pleasure as another a field of corn or a rich pasture, whilst I dispute their absolute being. Their phenomenal being I no more dispute than I do my own. I do not dispute, but point out the just way of viewing them. Religion makes us idealists. Any strong passion does. The best, the happiest moments of life are these delicious awakenings of the higher powers and the reverential withdrawing of nature before its god. It is remarkable that the greater the material apparatus, the more the material disappears, as in Alps and Niagara, in St. Peter’s and Naples. We are all aiming to be idealists, and covet the society of those who make us so, as the sweet singer, the orator, the ideal painter. What nimbleness and buoyancy the conversation of the spiritualist produces in us. We tread on air; the world begins to dislimn. For the education of the Understanding the earth and world serve.... Nature, from an immoveable god, on which, as reptiles, we creep, and to which we must conform our being, becomes an instrument, and serves us with all her kingdoms: then becomes a spectacle. To the rude it seems as if matter had absolute existence, existed from an intrinsic necessity. The first effect of thought is to make us sensible that spirit exists from an intrinsic necessity, that matter has a merely phenomenal or accidental being, being created from spirit, or being the manifestation of spirit. The moment our higher faculties are called into activity we are domesticated, and our awkwardness or torpor or discomfort gives place to natural and agreeable movements.

The first lesson of Religion is. The things that are seen are temporal; the unseen, eternal. It is easy to solve the problem of individual existence. Why Milton, Shakspear, or Canova should be, there is reason enough. But why the million should exist, drunk with the opium of Time and Custom, does not appear. If their existence is phenomenal, they serve so valuable a purpose to the education of Milton, that, grant us the Ideal theory, and the universe is solved. Otherwise, the moment a man discovers that he has aims which his faculties cannot answer, the world becomes a riddle. Yet Piety restores him to Health.
June: All male inhabitants of St. Helena were enrolled in a “Volunteer” Corps.

Three negrero, two flying the Portuguese flag and one flying the Spanish flag (as depicted below), entered Cuban waters during this month bearing cargos of fresh slaves from Africa: the Escorpion, master Carlos; the Liberal, master Ribeiro (on one of its four known Middle Passage voyages); the Cristina, master Estevez (on its 2nd of two known Middle Passages).
July 8, Friday: The HMS Beagle and Charles Darwin reached the island of St. Helena. They would remain at anchor for six days and he would examine 746 plant species, 52 of them indigenous (copies of A NATURALIST’S VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD, presented to the Governor in commemoration of his visit, are preserved at the Castle). He was unable to sight the wire-bird plover Charadrius sanctaehelenae, official bird of the island. He found the terrain to be reminiscent of Wales and commented on the abject poverty of the working people and emancipated slaves there, who were able to afford only rice with a small bit of salt meat.

(It is to be noticed that Darwin makes no mention of meeting Jonathan the giant tortoise on this island in the Atlantic, or any giant tortoises similar to the ones he would be studying later while on his extended visit to the Galápagos group of islands in the Pacific. However, it seems to me to be very likely that had these giant lawn ornaments been present during the period of Bonaparte, they would have still been present during the time of Darwin, and it seems to me to be very likely that Darwin, who resided near the Bonaparte tomb and paid visits to Longwood, would have observed them and described them and commented upon them! –The conclusion I draw is an easy one: they hadn’t yet been brought there.)

July 12, Tuesday: Charles Darwin was exploring the island of St. Helena:

My guide was an elderly man, who had been a goatherd when a boy, & knew every step amongst the rocks. He was of a race many times mixed, & although with a dusky skin, he had not the disagreeable expression of a Mulatto: he was a very civil, quiet old man, & this appears the character of the greater part of the lower class. - It was strange to my ears to hear a man nearly white, & respectably dressed, talking with indifference of the times when he was a slave. - With my companion, who carried our dinners & a horn of water, which latter is quite necessary, as all in the lower valleys is saline, I every day took long walks. Beyond the limits of the elevated & central green circle, the wild valleys are quite desolate & untenanted. Here to the geologist, there are scenes of interest, which shew the successive changes & complicated violence, which have in past times happened. According to my views, St Helena has existed as an Isd from a very remote period, but that originally like most Volcanic Isds it has been raised in mass from beneath the waters. St Helena, situated so remote from any continent, in the midst of a great ocean & possessing an unique Flora, this little world, within itself excites our curiosity. - Birds & insects, as might be expected, are very few in number, indeed I believe all the birds have been introduced within late years. - Partridges & pheasant are tolerably abundant; the Isd is far too English not to be subject to strict game laws. I was told of a more unjust sacrifice to such ordinances,
than I ever heard of even in England: the poor people formerly used to burn a plant which grows on the coast rocks, & export soda; — a peremptory order came out to prohibit this practice, giving as a reason, that the Partridges would have no where to build!
Once the British Government had taken over, the annual subsidy of £90,000 that it had cost the East India Company to maintain St. Helena was no longer available. The order of the day was belt-tightening economy, and there were many cases of hardship when Company servants were dismissed from their posts. Many families and over a hundred young men, finding life difficult and seeing no prospect of improvement, emigrated to the Cape of Good Hope.

A missionary, of course, must have a wife. The Reverend William Ellis remarried with Sarah Stickney (1799-1872), a published author of books on the roles of women in society.\(^5\)

The Reverend Ellis had been asked by the directors of the London Missionary Society to write up his

\(^5\) She had started out as a Quaker but had become an Independent or Congregationalist.
researches about the island of Madagascar, and this appeared as a 2-volume HISTORY OF MADAGASCAR.
November: With no old age pensions available on St. Helena, friendly societies were founded to provide sickness, death, and old age care. In this month, for instance, the Mechanics and Friendly Benefit Society was instituted, and it would be followed in 1847 by the St. Helena Poor Society, in 1871 by the Foresters, the in 1878 by the St. Helena Church Provident Society.

The Queen of Spain, recognizing that there existed a loophole in the law against the international slave trade because, once the cargo of a slave ship had successfully been sneaked ashore, that cargo was legally slaves, issued a royal decree. She urged the Captain General of Cuba to impose the strictest controls upon this continuing recruitment of slaves.

(Her royal ukase would of course be ignored.)

A negrero flying the US flag, the Escorpion, master unknown, out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of 250 enslaved Africans on its one and only known Middle Passage voyage, arrived at Nassau, Bahamas.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Generoso Feliz, master unknown, out of Quelimane with a cargo of 725 enslaved Africans on its first of two known Middle Passages, arrived at the port of Ilha Grande, Brazil.
A Portuguese slaver, the Cerca, master unknown, out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of an unknown number of enslaved Africans on its only known such voyage, dropped anchor at Matanzas, Cuba.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Chiva, master unknown, out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of 140 enslaved Africans on its one and only known Middle Passage voyage, arrived at a port of Cuba.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Andorinha, master unknown, out of Angola with a cargo of 293 enslaved Africans on one of its four known Middle Passages, arrived at the port of Baia Botafogo, Brazil.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Minerva, master unknown, out of Angola with a cargo of 304 enslaved Africans on its second of two known Middle Passage voyages, arrived at the port of Ponta Negra, Brazil.
The Portuguese slaver Maria Segundo, master unknown, out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of 216 enslaved Africans on one of its ten-count-'em ten known Middle Passage voyages, arrived at a port of Cuba.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Esperanca, master unknown, out of Cabinda with a cargo of 600 enslaved Africans on one of its ten-count-'em ten known Middle Passage voyages, arrived at Rio de Janeiro.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Flor de’ Loanda, master unknown, out of Angola with a cargo of 377 enslaved Africans on one of its five known Middle Passage voyages, arrived at Rio de Janeiro, Brazil.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Lealdade, master unknown, out of Angola with a cargo of 357 enslaved Africans on one of its three known Middle Passage voyages, arrived at Rio de Janeiro, Brazil.
The homeopathy journal American Prover’s Union published the 1st of many reports on the effects of cannabis.

In the final years of Napoleon coffee beans grown on St. Helena had been popular in France, but then the demand had fallen as interest in this dead self-made man had waned. At this point the London coffee merchant firm Wm Burnie & Co was flogging such beans as of “very superior quality and flavour.”

In the “blue book” issued by the St. Helena government (a statistical record) columns previously labeled “Coloured” and “White” were rendered as a single column labeled “Population.”

August: On St. Helena, the Girls School at Plantation was closed, and a new school opened at Hutts Gate.

A negrero flying the Portuguese flag, the Amable Salome, master A. Sanchez, on its one and only known Middle Passage, arrived at its destination, Cuba.
A slaver flying the Portuguese flag, the Casualidad, master Flores J., on its one and only known Middle Passage, delivered a cargo of 489 enslaved Africans, arrived at the port of Guanimar, Cuba.
A slaver flying the Spanish flag (as shown below), the Felicidade, master Freitas, on its one and only known Middle Passage, out of Sao Tome, arrived at a port of Cuba.
December: On St. Helena, of the £31,645 2s 0d that the government had paid out in “emancipation loans” a total of £28,694 13s 1d, which is to say, 91% of the amount lent, remained still unpaid and was at this point taken off the books, forgiven.51

In the ongoing effort to eliminate human slavery from the world by exploring various ways in which white people might more readily do without slaves without in any way inconveniencing themselves, David Lee Child won a premium of $100 from the Massachusetts Agricultural Society for his beet sweetener. The Sugar Beet Company again guaranteed his salary and expenses. Lydia Maria Child’s father Convers Francis agreed to move to Northampton and live with them and thus help with expenses.

A world that obtained its sweetness out of sugar beets grown by free farmers would not need to have slavers arriving every month or so from Africa, with new crops of black slaves to use up in the sugar cane fields. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Alexander, master Hill, flying the Stars and Stripes on its one and only known Middle Passage, which vessel of US registry had sailed out of Principe during October 1839 and was at this point arriving in Cuban waters. There would be no need for the Portuguese negreros either, slave ships such as the Maria Segundo, master Figuera, on one of its ten-count-'em-ten known Middle Passage voyages, Mocambique with a cargo of 580 enslaved Africans, presently arriving at a port of Cuba. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Flor de’ Loanda, master J.J. Lopez, on one of its five known Middle Passage voyages, which had sailed out of the Congo River with a cargo of 320 enslaved Africans and was presently arriving at the port of Macae, Brazil. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Felicidade, master J. de Almeida, on one of its nine known Middle Passage voyages, which had sailed out of Angola and was presently arriving at a port of Cuba. Well, this does go on and on, doesn’t it? In a world of economic justice there would be no need for a negrero such as the Idalia, flying the Portuguese flag, under its master J. Romeiro, which had sailed out of Angola during September 1839 on its one and only known Middle Passage, and was at this point delivering its cargo of 244 enslaved Africans into the barracoons at the port of Ponta Negra, Brazil. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Ligeiro, master unknown, on one of its four known Middle Passage voyages, out of Benguela with a cargo of 321 enslaved Africans, presently arriving at the port of Paranagua, Brazil. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Animo Grande, master F. Silveira, on its one and only known Middle Passage, which had sailed out of Quelimane during October 1839 with a cargo of 590 enslaved Africans and was presently arriving at Campos, Brazil. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Aucorinha, master J. F. Silveira, on its one and only known Middle Passage, which had sailed out of Angola during November 1839 with a cargo of 280 enslaved Africans, and was presently arriving at the port.

51. You wouldn’t suppose this would fall under the rubric REPARATIONS, would you?
of Sao Sebastiao, Brazil. There would be no need for a negrero such as the General Cabreira, master J.P. de A. Kansia, on one of its five known Middle Passage voyages, which had sailed out of Angola with a cargo of 127 enslaved Africans, and was presently arriving at Rio de Janeiro, Brazil. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Doze de Outubro, master J.F. da Cruz, on one of its five known Middle Passage voyages, which had sailed out of Angola during November 1839 with a cargo of 263 enslaved Africans, and was presently arriving at the port of Ilha Grande, Brazil. There would be no need for a negrero such as the Fortuna de Africa, master J.A. Passagem, on one of its three known Middle Passage voyages, which had sailed out of Quelimane, and was presently off-loading its cargo of 429 enslaved Africans into the barracoon at the port of Macae, Brazil. A world of economic justice would be a sweet world indeed. Sometimes David and Maria dreamed of this. They were dedicating their lives in Northampton to make it be so.
February: Sir John Henry Lefroy created an observatory at Longwood on St. Helena for magnetic observations.

If there were any giant tortoises present on the lawn of that residence at that time, left over from the Bonaparte durée, Sir John made no mention of them (not that he would, and as we all are painfully aware, absence of evidence is not evidence of absence, but still it’s hard not to mention a giant tortoise or two ...).

Three negreros flying the Portuguese flag and one flying the Spanish flag brought new settlers to the New World during this month. The Dois Irmaos, master F.F. de Abreu, on one of its four known Middle Passage voyages, had sailed out of Quelimane during December 1839 with a cargo of 580, and was arriving at the port of Rio De Janeiro, Brazil. The Esperanca, master F.J. de Mendonca, on one of its ten-count-’em-ten known Middle Passage voyages, had sailed out of Angola with a cargo of 375, and was also off-loading them into the barracoons at Rio de Janeiro. The Maria Rita, master unknown, on the second of its two known Middle Passages, had sailed out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of 350, and was arriving at the Brazilian port of Camarivea. The Spanish negrero, the Iberia, master unknown, on its one and only known Middle Passage, was delivering a cargo of 320 enslaved persons obtained somewhere along the coast of Africa, to the
slave plantations of the Caribbean island of Puerto Rico.  

March: The British initiated a Vice Admiralty Court on St. Helena to render disposition in cases involving ship’s crews accused of engaging in slave trading along the west coast of Africa. When the sailing papers of the negrero Sarah Ann of New Orleans, that had been captured by a naval patrol ship in the suppression of the international slave trade, were examined, they were found to be fraudulent (HOUSE DOCUMENT, 26th Congress, 2d session V, Number 115, pages 184-7).

Five negreros flying the Portuguese flag were arriving in New World waters during this month:

The Jacinto, master unknown, on one of its three known Middle Passage voyages, out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of 480 enslaved Africans, arrived at the port of Mariel, Cuba.

The Formiga, master Goncabro, on its one and only known Middle Passage, arrived at the port of Pernambuco, Brazil.

52. Typically, a person might be able to last through about seven growing seasons at slave labor in the cane fields on these Caribbean plantations. Constant resupply was therefore a necessity of the situation.
The *Feliz*, master unknown, on its second of two known Middle Passages, out of an unknown area of Africa with a cargo of 180 enslaved Africans, arrived at the port of Matanzas, Cuba.

The *Feliz Animoso*, master F.S. Lima, on its one and only known Middle Passage, out of Angola, arrived at the port of Rio de Janeiro, Brazil.

The *Duque de Victoria*, master A.J. Santos, on its second of two known Middle Passages, having sailed out of Angola during February 1840 with a cargo of 420 enslaved Africans, also arrived at the port of Rio de Janeiro.

W.E. Burghardt Du Bois: A somewhat more sincere and determined effort to enforce the slave-trade laws now followed; and yet it is a significant fact that not until Lincoln’s administration did a slave-trader suffer death for violating the laws of the United States. The participation of Americans in the trade continued, declining somewhat between 1825 and 1830, and then reviving, until it reached its highest activity between 1840 and 1860. The development of a vast internal slave-trade, and the consequent rise in the South of vested interests strongly opposed to slave smuggling, led to a falling off in the illicit introduction of Negroes after 1825, until the fifties; nevertheless, smuggling never entirely ceased, and large numbers were thus added to the plantations of the Gulf States. Monroe had various constitutional scruples as to the execution of the Act of 1819; but, as Congress took no action, he at last put a fair interpretation on his powers, and appointed Samuel Bacon as an agent in Africa to form a settlement for recaptured Africans. Gradually the agency thus formed became merged with that of the Colonization Society on Cape Mesurado; and from this union Liberia was finally evolved.

Meantime, during the years 1818 to 1820, the activity of the slave-traders was prodigious. General James Tallmadge declared in the House, February 15, 1819: “Our laws are already highly penal against their introduction, and yet, it is a well known fact, that about fourteen thousand slaves have been brought into our country this last year.” In the same year Middleton of South Carolina and Wright of Virginia estimated illicit introduction at 13,000 and 15,000 respectively. Judge Story, in charging a jury, took occasion to say: “We have but too many proofs from unquestionable sources, that it [the slave-trade] is still carried on with all the implacable rapacity of former times. Avarice has grown more subtle in its evasions, and watches and seizes its prey with an appetite quickened rather than suppressed by its guilty vigils. American citizens are steeped to their very mouths (I can hardly use too bold a figure) in this stream of iniquity.” The following year, 1820, brought some significant statements from various members of Congress.

53. Attorney-General Wirt advised him, October, 1819, that no part of the appropriation could be used to purchase land in Africa or tools for the Negroes, or as salary for the agent: OPINIONS OF ATTORNEYS-GENERAL, I. 314-7. Monroe laid the case before Congress in a special message Dec. 20, 1819 (HOUSE JOURNAL, 16th Congress 1st session, page 57); but no action was taken there.
54. Cf. Kendall’s Report, August, 1830: SENATE DOCUMENT, 21st Congress 2d session, I. No. 1, pages 211-8; also see below, Chapter X.
55. Speech in the House of Representatives, Feb. 15, 1819, page 18; published in Boston, 1849.
56. Jay, INQUIRY INTO AMERICAN COLONIZATION (1838), page 59, note.
Said Smith of South Carolina: "Pharaoh was, for his temerity, drowned in the Red Sea, in pursuing them [the Israelites] contrary to God’s express will; but our Northern friends have not been afraid even of that, in their zeal to furnish the Southern States with Africans. They are better seamen than Pharaoh, and calculate by that means to elude the vigilance of Heaven; which they seem to disregard, if they can but elude the violated laws of their country." 58 As late as May he saw little hope of suppressing the traffic. 59 Sergeant of Pennsylvania declared: "It is notorious that, in spite of the utmost vigilance that can be employed, African negroes are clandestinely brought in and sold as slaves." 60 Plumer of New Hampshire stated that "of the unhappy beings, thus in violation of all laws transported to our shores, and thrown by force into the mass of our black population, scarcely one in a hundred is ever detected by the officers of the General Government, in a part of the country, where, if we are to believe the statement of Governor Rabun, ‘an officer who would perform his duty, by attempting to enforce the law [against the slave trade] is, by many, considered as an officious meddler, and treated with derision and contempt;’ ... I have been told by a gentleman, who has attended particularly to this subject, that ten thousand slaves were in one year smuggled into the United States; and that, even for the last year, we must count the number not by hundreds, but by thousands." 61 In 1821 a committee of Congress characterized prevailing methods as those "of the grossest fraud that could be practised to deceive the officers of government." 62 Another committee, in 1822, after a careful examination of the subject, declare that they "find it impossible to measure with precision the effect produced upon the American branch of the slave trade by the laws above mentioned, and the seizures under them. They are unable to state, whether those American merchants, the American capital and seamen which heretofore aided in this traffic, have abandoned it altogether, or have sought shelter under the flags of other nations." They then state the suspicious circumstance that, with the disappearance of the American flag from the traffic, "the trade, notwithstanding, increases annually, under the flags of other nations." They complain of the spasmodic efforts of the executive. They say that the first United States cruiser arrived on the African coast in March, 1820, and remained a "few weeks;" that since then four others had in two years made five visits in all; but "since the middle of last November, the commencement of the healthy season on that coast, no vessel has been, nor, as your committee is informed, is, under orders for that service." 63 The United States African agent, Ayres, reported in 1823: "I was informed by an American officer who had been on the coast in 1820, that he had boarded 20 American vessels in one

58. ANNALS OF CONGRESS, 16th Congress 1st session, pages 270-1. 
59. ANNALS OF CONGRESS, 16th Congress 1st session, page 698. 
60. ANNALS OF CONGRESS, 16th Congress 1st session, page 1207. 
61. ANNALS OF CONGRESS, 16th Congress 1st session, page 1433. 
63. HOUSE REPORTS, 17th Congress 1st session, II. No. 92, page 2. The President had in his message spoken in exhilarating tones of the success of the government in suppressing the trade. The House Committee appointed in pursuance of this passage made the above report. Their conclusions are confirmed by British reports: PARLIAMENTARY PAPERS, 1822, Vol. XXII., SLAVE TRADE, Further Papers, III. page 44. So, too, in 1823, Ashmun, the African agent, reports that thousands of slaves are being abducted.
morning, lying in the port of Gallinas, and fitted for the reception of slaves. It is a lamentable fact, that most of the harbours, between the Senegal and the line, were visited by an equal number of American vessels, and for the sole purpose of carrying away slaves. Although for some years the coast had been occasionally visited by our cruisers, their short stay and seldom appearance had made but slight impression on those traders, rendered hardy by repetition of crime, and avaricious by excessive gain. They were enabled by a regular system to gain intelligence of any cruiser being on the coast.\(^6^4\)

Even such spasmodic efforts bore abundant fruit, and indicated what vigorous measures might have accomplished. Between May, 1818, and November, 1821, nearly six hundred Africans were recaptured and eleven American slavers taken.\(^6^5\) Such measures gradually changed the character of the trade, and opened the international phase of the question. American slavers cleared for foreign ports, there took a foreign flag and papers, and then sailed boldly past American cruisers, although their real character was often well known. More stringent clearance laws and consular instructions might have greatly reduced this practice; but nothing was ever done, and gradually the laws became in large measure powerless to deal with the bulk of the illicit trade. In 1820, September 16, a British officer, in his official report, declares that, in spite of United States laws, "American vessels, American subjects, and American capital, are unquestionably engaged in the trade, though under other colours and in disguise."\(^6^6\) The United States ship "Cyane" at one time reported ten captures within a few days, adding: "Although they are evidently owned by Americans, they are so completely covered by Spanish papers that it is impossible to condemn them."\(^6^7\) The governor of Sierra Leone reported the rivers Nunez and Pongas full of renegade European and American slave-traders;\(^6^8\) the trade was said to be carried on "to an extent that almost staggers belief."\(^6^9\) Down to 1824 or 1825, reports from all quarters prove this activity in slave-trading.

The execution of the laws within the country exhibits grave defects and even criminal negligence. Attorney-General Wirt finds it necessary to assure collectors, in 1819, that "it is against public policy to dispense with prosecutions for violation of the law to prohibit the Slave trade."\(^7^0\) One district attorney writes: "It appears to be almost impossible to enforce the laws of the United States against offenders after the negroes have been landed in the state."\(^7^1\) Again, it is asserted that "when vessels engaged in the slave trade have been detained

\(^{64}\) Ayres to the Secretary of the Navy, Feb. 24, 1823; reprinted in FRIENDS' VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 31.

\(^{65}\) HOUSE REPORTS, 17th Congress 1st session, II. No. 92, pages 5-6. The slavers were the "Ramirez," "Endymion," "Esperanza," "Plattsburg," "Science," "Alexander," "Eugene," "Matthilde," "Daphne," "Eliza," and "La Pensée." In these 573 Africans were taken. The naval officers were greatly handicapped by the size of the ships, etc. (cf. FRIENDS' VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), pages 33-41). They nevertheless acted with great zeal.


\(^{67}\) HOUSE REPORTS, 17th Congress 1st session, II. No. 92, pages 15-20.

\(^{68}\) HOUSE DOCUMENT, 18th Congress 1st session, VI. No. 119, page 13.


\(^{70}\) OPINIONS OF ATTORNEYS-GENERAL, V., 717.

\(^{71}\) R.W. Habersham to the Secretary of the Navy, August, 1821; reprinted in FRIENDS' VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 47.
by the American cruisers, and sent into the slave-holding states, there appears at once a difficulty in securing the freedom to these captives which the laws of the United States have decreed for them.”

72 In some cases, one man would smuggle in the Africans and hide them in the woods; then his partner would “rob” him, and so all trace be lost.73 Perhaps 350 Africans were officially reported as brought in contrary to law from 1818 to 1820: the absurdity of this figure is apparent.74 A circular letter to the marshals, in 1821, brought reports of only a few well-known cases, like that of the “General Ramirez;” the marshal of Louisiana had “no information.”75

There appears to be little positive evidence of a large illicit importation into the country for a decade after 1825. It is hardly possible, however, considering the activity in the trade, that slaves were not largely imported. Indeed, when we note how the laws were continually broken in other respects, absence of evidence of petty smuggling becomes presumptive evidence that collusive or tacit understanding of officers and citizens allowed the trade to some extent.76 Finally, it must be noted that during all this time scarcely a man suffered for participating in the trade, beyond the loss of the Africans and, more rarely, of his ship. Red-handed slavers, caught in the act and convicted, were too often, like La Coste of South Carolina, the subjects of executive clemency.77 In certain cases there were those who even had the effrontery to ask Congress to cancel their own laws. For instance, in 1819 a Venezuelan privateer, secretly fitted out and manned by Americans in Baltimore, succeeded in capturing several American, Portuguese, and Spanish slavers, and appropriating the slaves; being finally wrecked herself, she transferred her crew and slaves to one of her prizes, the “Antelope,” which was eventually captured by a United States cruiser and the 280 Africans sent to Georgia. After much litigation, the United States Supreme Court ordered those captured from Spaniards to be surrendered, and the others to be returned to Africa. By some mysterious process, only 139 Africans now remained, 100 of whom were sent to Africa. The Spanish claimants of the remaining thirty-nine sold them to a certain Mr. Wilde, who gave bond to transport them out of the country. Finally, in December, 1827, there came an innocent petition to Congress to cancel this bond.78 A bill to that effect passed and was approved, May 2, 1828,79 and in consequence these Africans remained as slaves in Georgia.

On the whole, it is plain that, although in the period from 1807 to 1820 Congress laid down broad lines of legislation sufficient, save in some details, to suppress the African slave trade to America, yet the execution of these laws was criminally lax. Moreover, by the facility with which slavers could disguise their identity, it was possible for them to escape even a vigorous enforcement of our laws. This situation could properly be met only by energetic and sincere international co-

72. FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 42.
73. FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 43.
74. Cf. above, pages 126-7.
75. FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 42.
76. A few accounts of captures here and there would make the matter less suspicious; these, however, do not occur. How large this suspected illicit traffic was, it is of course impossible to say; there is no reason why it may not have reached many hundreds per year.
June: The Vice-Admiralty Court of Her Majesty’s Government on St. Helena for the trial of ship’s crews accused of engaging in slave trading along the west coast of Africa heard its initial case. Large numbers of negrero ships would be captured and brought to the court during the following decade. The ships would be sold or broken up while their human cargoes were being fed, clothed, and retained at the Liberated African Depot in Ruperts Valley. Most of the blacks who recovered would be given free passage to the West Indies or British Guiana as indentured labourers, although some would elect to remain as servants or at various public works. This work of liberating slaves would bring needed money and employment to the impoverished island, but it would produce also the scourge of the “White Ant.” These termites would come ashore among the timbers of a slave ship from Brazil that was broken up and its recovered materials stored in Jamestown. Their appetite not only for timbers but also for furniture, books, and papers would prove so insatiable that over the following several decades the rebuilding of properties in the town would be a considerable expense.

A negrero flying the Portuguese flag, the *Experienca*, master M. Antonio, on its second of two known Middle Passages, Benguela with a cargo of 387 enslaved Africans, arrived at a port in Brazil.

A slaver flying the Spanish flag, the *Feliza*, master Sanchez, on its one and only known Middle Passage, arrived at its destination, Puerto Rico.

A slaver flying the Spanish flag (as shown below), the *Constancia*, master Ponasco, on one of its four known

77. Cf. editorial in Niles’s Register, XXII. 114. Cf. also the following instances of pardons: —


PRESIDENT MADISON: July 29, 1809, fifteen vessels arrived at New Orleans from Cuba, with 666 white persons and 683 negroes. Every penalty incurred under the Act of 1807 was remitted. (Note: “Several other pardons of this nature were granted.”) PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, I. 179.

NOV. 8, 1809, John Hopkins and Lewis Le Roy, convicted for importing a slave. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, I. 184-5.


PRESIDENT MONROE: June 11, 1822, Thomas Shields, convicted for bringing slaves into New Orleans. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 15.

Aug. 24, 1822, J.F. Smith, sentenced to five years’ imprisonment and $3000 fine; served twenty-five months and was then pardoned. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 22.

July 23, 1823, certain parties liable to penalties for introducing slaves into Alabama. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 63.


PRESIDENT J.Q. ADAMS: March 4, 1826, Robert Perry; his ship was forfeited for slave-trading. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 140.

Jan. 17, 1827, Jesse Perry; forfeited ship, and was convicted for introducing slaves. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 158.

Feb. 13, 1827, Zenas Winston; incurred penalties for slave-trading. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 161. The four following cases are similar to that of Winston: —


March 25, 1828, Joseph Badger. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 192.


PRESIDENT JACKSON: Five cases. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 225, 270, 301, 393, 440.

The above cases were taken from manuscript copies of the Washington records, made by Mr. W.C. Endicott, Jr., and kindly loaned me.


79. STATUTES AT LARGE, VI. 376.
Middle Passage voyages, out of an unknown area of Africa, arrived at Puerto Rico.

A slaver flying the US flag, the *Crawford*, master M. Brown, on its one and only known Middle Passage, out of Gallinas, sailing during April 1840, arrived at a port of Cuba.

A slaver flying the US flag, the *Caballero*, master Huffington, on its one and only known Middle Passage, out of Corisco, sailing during April 1840, arrived at a port of Cuba.

A slaver flying the US flag, the *Hudson*, master Clift, on its one and only known Middle Passage, out of Cabinda, sailing during April 1840, arrived at a port of Cuba (HOUSE DOCUMENT, 26th Congress, 2d session V, Number 115, pages 65-6).

80. Among interesting minor proceedings in this period were two Senate bills to register slaves so as to prevent illegal importation. They were both dropped in the House; a House proposition to the same effect also came to nothing: SENATE JOURNAL, 15th Congress 1st session, pages 147, 152, 157, 165, 170, 188, 201, 203, 232, 237; 15th Congress 2d session, pages 63, 74, 77, 202, 207, 285, 291, 297; HOUSE JOURNAL, 15th Congress 1st session, page 332; 15th Congress 2d session, pages 303, 305, 316; 16th Congress 1st session, page 150. Another proposition was contained in the Meigs resolution presented to the House, Feb. 5, 1820, which proposed to devote the public lands to the suppression of the slave-trade. This was ruled out of order. It was presented again and laid on the table in 1821: HOUSE JOURNAL, 16th Congress 1st session, pages 196, 200, 227; 16th Congress 2d session, page 238.
October 15, Thursday: Henry Thoreau jotted down in his journal a note about living downtown:

Every maggot lives down town.
Journal, October 15, 1840

The remains of the Emperor Napoléon I, decently interred at Sane Valley on St. Helena in 1821, were taken aboard the French frigate La Belle Poule to be conveyed back to Paris.

December: Lemon Valley on St. Helena was designated as a smallpox quarantine area for slaves liberated from negrero vessels by the Royal Navy.

Noting the apparatus riveted around his neck, of an iron collar with prongs extending above his head and atop this a small bell which he could not reach, a band of “blacklegs” passing by, Thomas Wilson & Co., bought Henry Bibb at a reduced price for speculation. These white men, gamblers, figured they could represent him as a nonproblematic case and pass him off on some unwary purchaser at full value. He was not granted an opportunity to say good-bye to his wife Malinda or his daughter, who at the time would have been five or six years old. These venturesome fellows would not, however, be able to retail him as planned, for his obvious intelligence was such as to make potential purchasers frightened that he was able to read and write. Eventually, unable to dispose of their purchase for a profit while vending him as a single male slave, they went back and attempted to purchase also his wife and daughter, so that the three could be vended as a more-valuable family unit less likely to be troublesome. The owner would not sell the wife and daughter. At that point Bibb struck a deal with his speculative owners, that he would play dumb and cooperate in their sale of him, if in return they would share his sale price with him. He then arranged to be purchased by an unsuspecting half-Indian at a horse race in the Indian Territory of Oklahoma. The purchase price was $900 which the purchaser counted out in
gold and silver, and true to their word the blacklegs slipped Henry his share of the windfall. This person had a plantation, and slaves, despite the fact that the only crops he raised were for local consumption: “he was the most reasonable, and humane slaveholder that I ever belonged to.... All things considered, if I must be a slave, I had by far, rather be a slave to an Indian, than to a white man, from the experience I have had with both.” He seemed to be a Presbyterian. This kind master would, however, sicken and die, and then during the funeral celebrations, Bibb would seize the opportunity to again steal himself away.

During this month in which Henry was again stealing himself away, a negrero flying the Portuguese flag, the Conceicao do Maria, master J.P. Costa, on the Middle Passage out of Angola, was arriving at the port of Rio De Janeiro and at the port of Pernambuco, Brazil carrying an unknown number, probably quite a few, of new recruits to slave status.

December 15, Tuesday: The remains of the Emperor Napoléon I, retrieved from their lonely grave on the lonely island of St. Helena by the Prince de Joinville (son of King Louis-Philippe), arrived in Paris to be paraded through the metropolis in a 4-story-high vehicle and viewed by an estimated 800,000 members of the general populace. In the presence of the royal family and many others (including Frédéric François Chopin), the Requiem of Mozart was performed in the chapel of Les Invalides. The remains were lowered into the vault, and the lid was closed with a slight thump. (Did I mention that this was a Tuesday?)
October: The St. Helena Regiment of 5 companies, formed in Winchester, England, arrived at that island.
May: A market was established in Jamestown, St. Helena on its present site.
On Albemarle Street in London, the firm of John Murray published a couple of vastly intriguing books about the rural experience. There was Edward Jesse’s *Scenes and Tales of Country Life, with Recollections of Natural History*:
Also, there was Lucia Elizabeth Balcombe Abell’s Recollections of the Emperor Napoleon: During the First Three Years of His Captivity on the Island of St. Helena: Including the Time of His Residence at Her Father’s House, “The Briars,” by Mrs. Abell (late Miss Elizabeth Balcombe).

(You will note that this author makes no mention of any giant tortoises making themselves useful as lawn ornaments.)

81. Miss Lizzie may have been channeling the geist of Bill Clinton: the artistic license of “of” in this title might signify “by” but does signify “about.”
March 7, Thursday: The Reverend Theodore Parker was impressed by the structure in which he supposed the emperor Constantine the Great’s 384 bishops had 1st assembled upon the surrender of the Roman empire to the universal church.82

“History teaches us that religion and patriotism have always gone hand in hand.”

— General Douglas MacArthur

As soon as Benjamin Robert Haydon had succeeded in selling one of his paintings, his practice was to set about generating more copies of the same thing for sale. He had sold one of his paintings of Napoleon musing in the sunset on the cliff at St. Helena to the King of Hanover, so he entered in his diary:

I have painted nineteen Napoleons, Thirteen Musings at S. Helena, and six other Musings. By heavens! how many more?

June: Two frigates loaded up with water at St. Helena to take to Ascension Island, on which drought was severe.

John Adolphus Etzler while with the Concordists at Ham Common in Surrey had published EMIGRATION TO THE TROPICAL WORLD, FOR THE MELIORATION OF ALL CLASSES OF PEOPLE OF ALL NATIONS. At this point he relocated London to be at to the heart of the reform movement, formed a Tropical Emigration Society, and selected, as the venue of his earthly paradise, Venezuela. This community, like his community in Ohio, would of course fail.

82. (It seems that the Reverend Parker was crediting a now-exposed 8th-Century forgery — but that’s not the point here.)
December: A decision was made to erect a monument to the crew of the brig *Waterwitch*, that had sunk while liberating *slaves*.

In this month Spain yet again warned the US government that its refusal to pay indemnities for the *La Amistad* was going to have serious international repercussions.  

83. Has it occurred to you to wonder why, when in 1842 the surviving 35 of the black *privateers* of the Amistad mutiny had been sent back to Africa aboard the bark *Gentleman*, they had been sent home as mere charity wards with nobody ever thinking to return to them their prize schooner *La Amistad* admittedly worth $70,000 — which they had won fair and square with their blood, sweat, and tears? For sure, had it been 35 surviving free white *privateers*, they would not have been denied this booty which belonged to them, but because they were instead free blacks, it never even occurred to any of the white players in this legal drama to give them their prize schooner back! One of the open issues of this drama, therefore, is: what happened to the *La Amistad*? *Where did this valuable piece of property go? Which white men were allowed to profit from it?* Our history books are, of course, silent. This is it seems a question which, because of the ingrained nature of our racism, it has never occurred to us to pose:

“*In those parts of the Union in which the negroes are no longer slaves, they have in no wise drawn nearer to the whites. On the contrary, the prejudice of the race appears to be stronger in the States which have abolished slavery ... and nowhere is it so intolerant as in those States where servitude has never been known.*”

— Alexis de Tocqueville
At this point coffee beans grown on St. Helena were retailing in London at 1d per pound — more costly than any other variety.

Prosper Merimee’s novel about CARMEN, a feisty Gypsy girl in an Andalusian cigarette factory.

John Quincy Adams wrote to the Reverend Samuel H. Cox: “In my early youth I was addicted to the use of tobacco in two of its mysteries, smoking and chewing. I was warned by a medical friend of the pernicious operation of this habit upon the stomach and the nerves.”

Thomas De Quincey’s “Coleridge and Opium-Eating” and “Suspiria de Profundis” appeared in Blackwood’s Magazine. His “On Wordsworth’s Poetry” and “Notes on Gilfillan’s Gallery of Literary Portraits: Godwin, Foster, Hazlitt, Shelley, Keats” (which would run until 1846) appeared in Tait’s Edinburgh Magazine.

Perry Davis’s patent vegetable painkiller consisted of opiates and ethanol and—as is evident in the globe map on its label—originated from that known center of “Joy to the World” sensory satisfaction, Providence, Rhode Island:

January 6, Monday: Major-General George Middlemore, who had leveled and macadamized what is now know as Napoleon Street on St. Helena, was succeeded as governor by Colonel Hamelin Trelawney, who would establish “The Market” on the bridge in Jamestown.

July: St. Helena’s 1st Baptist minister, the Reverend James McGregor Bertram, arrived from Cape Town. An initial meetingplace was provided by Mrs. Janisch (mother of a future governor); in 1854 a mission chapel would be erected.

October: John Adolphus Etzler, finding a fertile, cheap, and healthful area west of Caracas at Valencia, purchased a tract upon which he expected that the Tropical Emigration Society colonists would settle. Carr and Taylor, however, operating independently, had purchased some hilly acreage along the Gulf of Paria in Guinimita.

St. Helena’s St. James Church reopened, after having undergone repairs since January 1843.
A PURELY VEGETABLE MEDICINE

PERRY DAVIS' VEGETABLE PAIN KILLER.

JOY TO THE WORLD

RHODE ISLAND

ST. HELENA
December: On St. Helena, both an Agricultural and Horticultural Society and a Volunteer Rifle Corps were established. There was discord among the Tropical Emigration Society colonists over whether to purchase a ship for their ocean voyage, or rely on John Adolphus Etzler’s unproved Naval Automaton to get them to Venezuela in time for spring planting. Some of the emigration society’s members objected to the idea that of the 1,000 shares, “Etzler and Company” was to receive 100 shares in compensation for the use of his Satellite to clear and work the land — he should receive such special compensation, if at all, only if his mechanism did indeed function as promised. Etzler the capitalist had attempted too promising a bargain. Only 73 out of an expected 100 colonists, therefore, applied to be aboard the first ship. However, a group of 31 brave souls had left England months early, and arrived at their destination along the Gulf of Paria in Guinimita during this month. They were so early that only 2/3ds of the land had been cleared of jungle, and so they would need to quarter temporarily in Trinidad at their own expense. (When the first official ship of immigrants would arrive, they would find that 15 of these 31 initial colonists had already died.)
February: Having gotten his wife pregnant again, Ellery Channing decided not to be a Massachusetts farmer and not to listen to an infant crying, and began to solicit help from his friends because he needed for his personal development as a poet to travel in Europe and inspect masterpieces of art. He manage to raise the sum of $300, which he considered to be adequate since he planned to travel steerage class at a cost of $25 each way across the Atlantic. Margaret Fuller commented reasonably on “the unnatural selfishness of a man who, having brought a woman into this situation of suffering peril and care, proposes to leave her without even knowing whether she lives or dies under it,” but Ellery explained to her what “a bugbear in the house” he was “during the first year of a child’s life.”

Charles Lane wrote Bronson Alcott in Concord telling him of a Valenties Day party in Brooklyn, New York at which the guest list had included such sweetheartes as Albert Brisbane, Christopher Pearse Cranch, George William Curtis, William Henry Furness, Margaret Fuller, and Edgar Allan Poe. Fuller had acted as postmistress and the guests had fabricated Valentine cards to post to one another.

At St. Helena, 13 ships were destroyed and the sea wall and wharf damaged by 3 days of heavy rollers.
May 3, Sunday: The Mexican army surrounded a fort in Texas.

Governor Colonel Hamelin Trelawney, who established “The Market” on the bridge in Jamestown, St. Helena, died in office.

Waldo Emerson and Bronson Alcott sauntered to Walden Pond and stood on the higher hill on the opposite side of the pond from Henry Thoreau’s shanty, at the site which Emerson had set aside for his writerly tower, their magisterial gaze thus encompassing not only that little home but also Mount Monadnock and Mount Wachusett.

Monte Video, Seat of Daniel Wadsworth, Esq.

“Huckleberries”: Botanists, on the look out for what they thought a respectable descent, have long been inclined to trace this family backward to Mount Ida. Tourneforte does not hesitate to give it the ancient name of Vine of Mount Ida. The common English Raspberry also is called Rubus Idaea or the Mount Ida bramble — from the old Greek name. The truth of it seems to be that blueberries and raspberries flourish best in cool and airy situations, on hills and mountains, and I can easily believe that something like these at least grows on Mount Ida. But Mount Monadnoc is as good as Mount Ida, and probably better for blueberries, though its name is said to mean Bad Rock. But the worst rocks are the best for poets’ uses. Let us then exchange that oriental uncertainty for this western certainty.
At this point Giles Waldo, in the Hawaiian Islands, was negotiating with the King of the Sandwich Islands for a land grant to be awarded to Bronson Alcott, which—if such a deal had gone down—would have radically altered the context in which we now peruse Louisa May Alcott’s LITTLE WOMEN and its many sequels.

Sunday May 3d, 1856: I heard the whippoorwill last night for the first time. Carlyle’s books are not to be studied but ready with a swift satisfaction—rather—Their flavor & charm—their gust is like the froth of wine which can only be tasted once & that hastily. On a review I never can find the pages I had read—The book has done its work when once I have reached the conclusion, and will never inspire me again.

They are calculated to make one strong and lively impression—and entertain us for the while more entirely than
any—but that is the last we shall know of them. They have not that stereotyped success & accomplishment which we name classic.

It is easy and inexpensive entertainment—and we are not pained by the author’s straining & impoverishing himself to feed his readers.

It is plain that the reviewers and politicians do not know how to dispose of him—They take it too easily & must try again a loftier pitch. They speak of him within the passing hour as if he were one other ephemeral man of letters about town who lives under Mr. Somebody’s administration. Who will not vex the world after burial—But he does not depend on the favor of reviewers—nor the honesty of booksellers—nor on popularity—He has more to impart than to receive from his generation.

He is a strong & finished journeyman in his craft—and reminds us oftener of Samuel Johnson than of any other. So few writers are respectable—ever get out of their apprenticeship—As the man said that as for composition it killed him he didn’t know which thought to put down first—that his hand writing was not a very good one—and then there was spelling to be attended to—So if our able stock writer can take care of his periods & spelling—and keep within the limits of a few proprieties—he forgets that there is still originality & wisdom to be attended to, and these would kill him.

There is always a more impressive and simpler statement possible than consists with any victorious comparisons.

We prize the good faith & valor of soberness & gravity when we are to have dealings with a man. If this is his playful mood we desire so much the more to be admitted to his serious mood.
November 23, Monday: Thomas Mayne Reid, Jr. obtained a commission as a 2d Lieutenant in the 1st New York Volunteer Infantry Regiment, Colonel Ward B. Burnett commanding (his widow would report “Young Mayne Reid early evinced a taste for war. When a small boy he was often found running barefooted along the road after a drum and fife band, greatly to his mother’s dismay. She chided him, saying, ‘What will the folks think to see Mr Reid’s son going about like this?’ To which young Mayne replied, ‘I don’t care. I’d rather be Mr Drum than Mr Reid.’”).

The office of governor of St. Helena had been empty since the previous governor had died, in May. At this point a new governor, Major-General Sir Patrick Ross, took office. The new governor would create Barnes Road, which runs between upper Jamestown and Francis Plan, around Peak Hill (although remnants of this remain, it is no longer a road).
February: New colors were presented to the St. Helena Militia.

A bill proposed by a Southern senator was approved, whereby the Spanish government would be offered the comparatively low value of $50,000 in full settlement for the La Amistad. (The House of Representatives would fail to go along with this Senate initiative.)

84. Has it occurred to you to wonder why, when in 1842 the surviving 35 of the black privateers of the Amistad mutiny had been sent back to Africa aboard the bark Gentleman, they had been sent home as mere charity wards with nobody ever thinking to return to them their prize schooner La Amistad admittedly worth $70,000 — which they had won fair and square with their blood, sweat, and tears? For sure, had it been 35 surviving free white privateers, they would not have been denied this booty which belonged to them, but because they were instead free blacks, it never even occurred to any of the white players in this legal drama to give them their prize schooner back! One of the open issues of this drama, therefore, is: what happened to the La Amistad? Where did this valuable piece of property go? Which white men were allowed to profit from it? Our history books are, of course, silent. This is a question which it has never occurred to us to pose.
March: The Church lands of St. Helena were conveyed to the Bishop in Cape Town.

March 7, Wednesday: On this day and the following one, Abraham Lincoln would be making an appeal before the US Supreme Court in regard to the Illinois statute of limitations, but his appeal would be unsuccessful.

The 1st Bishop of Cape Town, Robert Gray, arrived (St. Helena had been included in the See of Cape Town when it had been established two years previously). This was the 1st visit by a Bishop and thus the 1st confirmations on the island — a total of 366. Bishop Gray would make two further visits, in 1852 and in 1857.

June: On St. Helena, official records of births, marriages, and deaths were initiated.

November: Barnes Road, between Jamestown and Francis Plan on St. Helena, was completed, and was named after the Major Barnes who had organized the construction work.
D.G. Lamont painted “Count Rumford’s Farewell,” a work that we can now view in a different mode from the mode in which it was painted (in the rear of this New Hampshire painting is Dinah, the family’s slave).

The negrero Martha, of New-York, was captured while about to embark 1,800 slaves. The captain would be allowed to make bail, and would therefore be able to escape punishment for this capital crime of piracy (A.H. Foote, AFRICA AND THE AMERICAN FLAG, pages 285-92).

The negrero Lucy Ann, of Boston, was captured by the British navy while carrying 547 slaves (SENATE EXECUTIVE DOCUMENT, 31st Congress, 1st session XIV Number 66, pages 1-10 ff).

The American negrero Navarre, trading to Brazil, was searched and then seized by a British cruiser (SENATE EXECUTIVE DOCUMENT, 31st Congress, 1st session XIV Number 66, pages 1-10 ff).

It was in about this year that the American negreros Louisa Beaton, Pilot, Chatsworth, Meteor, R. de Zaldo, Chester, etc. were boarded and searched by British patrol vessels (SENATE EXECUTIVE DOCUMENT, 31st Congress, 1st session XIV Number 66, passim).

It is worth mentioning that during the previous decade some 15,000 enslaved Africans from seized negrero cargos had been rerouted, by way of mid-Atlantic St. Helena, by blockade ships of the British navy.
effort to enforce the slave-trade laws now followed; and yet it is a significant fact that not until Lincoln's administration did a slave-trader suffer death for violating the laws of the United States. The participation of Americans in the trade continued, declining somewhat between 1825 and 1830, and then reviving, until it reached its highest activity between 1840 and 1860. The development of a vast internal slave-trade, and the consequent rise in the South of vested interests strongly opposed to slave smuggling, led to a falling off in the illicit introduction of Negroes after 1825, until the fifties; nevertheless, smuggling never entirely ceased, and large numbers were thus added to the plantations of the Gulf States. Monroe had various constitutional scruples as to the execution of the Act of 1819; but, as Congress took no action, he at last put a fair interpretation on his powers, and appointed Samuel Bacon as an agent in Africa to form a settlement for recaptured Africans. Gradually the agency thus formed became merged with that of the Colonization Society on Cape Mesurado; and from this union Liberia was finally evolved.

Meantime, during the years 1818 to 1820, the activity of the slave-traders was prodigious. General James Tallmadge declared in the House, February 15, 1819: "Our laws are already highly penal against their introduction, and yet, it is a well known fact, that about fourteen thousand slaves have been brought into our country this last year." In the same year Middleton of South Carolina and Wright of Virginia estimated illicit introduction at 13,000 and 15,000 respectively. Judge Story, in charging a jury, took occasion to say: "We have but too many proofs from unquestionable sources, that it [the slave-trade] is still carried on with all the implacable rapacity of former times. Avarice has grown more subtle in its evasions, and watches and seizes its prey with an appetite quickened rather than suppressed by its guilty vigils. American citizens are steeped to their very mouths (I can hardly use too bold a figure) in this stream of iniquity." The following year, 1820, brought some significant statements from various members of Congress. Said Smith of South Carolina: "Pharaoh was, for his temerity, drowned in the Red Sea, in pursuing them [the Israelites] contrary to God’s express will; but our Northern friends have not been afraid even of that, in their zeal to furnish the Southern States with Africans. They are better seamen than Pharaoh, and calculate by that means to elude the vigilance of Heaven; which they seem to disregard, if they can but elude the violated laws of their country."

As late as May he saw little hope of suppressing the traffic. Sergeant of Pennsylvania declared: "It is notorious that, in spite of the utmost vigilance that can be employed, African negroes are..."
clandestinely brought in and sold as slaves." Plumer of New Hampshire stated that "of the unhappy beings, thus in violation of all laws transported to our shores, and thrown by force into the mass of our black population, scarcely one in a hundred is ever detected by the officers of the General Government, in a part of the country, where, if we are to believe the statement of Governor Rabun, ‘an officer who would perform his duty, by attempting to enforce the law [against the slave trade] is, by many, considered as an officious meddler, and treated with derision and contempt;’ ... I have been told by a gentleman, who has attended particularly to this subject, that ten thousand slaves were in one year smuggled into the United States; and that, even for the last year, we must count the number not by hundreds, but by thousands." In 1821 a committee of Congress characterized prevailing methods as those "of the grossest fraud that could be practised to deceive the officers of government." Another committee, in 1822, after a careful examination of the subject, declare that they "find it impossible to measure with precision the effect produced upon the American branch of the slave trade by the laws above mentioned, and the seizures under them. They are unable to state, whether those American merchants, the American capital and seamen which heretofore aided in this traffic, have abandoned it altogether, or have sought shelter under the flags of other nations." They then state the suspicious circumstance that, with the disappearance of the American flag from the traffic, "the trade, notwithstanding, increases annually, under the flags of other nations." They complain of the spasmodic efforts of the executive. They say that the first United States cruiser arrived on the African coast in March, 1820, and remained a "few weeks;" that since then four others had in two years made five visits in all; but "since the middle of last November, the commencement of the healthy season on that coast, no vessel has been, nor, as your committee is informed, is, under orders for that service." The United States African agent, Ayres, reported in 1823: "I was informed by an American officer who had been on the coast in 1820, that he had boarded 20 American vessels in one morning, lying in the port of Gallinas, and fitted for the reception of slaves. It is a lamentable fact, that most of the harbours, between the Senegal and the line, were visited by an equal number of American vessels, and for the sole purpose of carrying away slaves. Although for some years the coast had been occasionally visited by our cruisers, their short stay and seldom appearance had made but slight impression on those traders, rendered hardy by repetition of crime, and avaricious by excessive gain. They were enabled by a regular system to gain intelligence of any cruiser being on the coast." Even such spasmodic efforts bore abundant fruit, and indicated what vigorous measures might have accomplished. Between May, 92. ANNALS OF CONGRESS, 16th Congress 1st session, page 1207.
93. ANNALS OF CONGRESS, 16th Congress 1st session, page 1433.
94. Referring particularly to the case of the slaver “Plattsburg.” Cf. HOUSE REPORTS, 17th Congress 1st session, II. No. 92, page 10.
95. HOUSE REPORTS, 17th Congress 1st session, II. No. 92, page 2. The President had in his message spoken in exhilarating tones of the success of the government in suppressing the trade. The House Committee appointed in pursuance of this passage made the above report. Their conclusions are confirmed by British reports: PARLIAMENTARY PAPERS, 1822, Vol. XXII., SLAVE TRADE, Further Papers, III. page 44. So, too, in 1823, Ashmun, the African agent, reports that thousands of slaves are being ab ducted.
96. Ayres to the Secretary of the Navy, Feb. 24, 1823; reprinted in FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 31.
1818, and November, 1821, nearly six hundred Africans were recaptured and eleven American slavers taken. Such measures gradually changed the character of the trade, and opened the international phase of the question. American slavers cleared for foreign ports, took a foreign flag and papers, and then sailed boldly past American cruisers, although their real character was often well known. More stringent clearance laws and consular instructions might have greatly reduced this practice; but nothing was ever done, and gradually the laws became in large measure powerless to deal with the bulk of the illicit trade. In 1820, September 16, a British officer, in his official report, declares that, in spite of United States laws, “American vessels, American subjects, and American capital, are unquestionably engaged in the trade, though under other colours and in disguise.” The United States ship “Cyane” at one time reported ten captures within a few days, adding: “Although they are evidently owned by Americans, they are so completely covered by Spanish papers that it is impossible to condemn them.” The governor of Sierra Leone reported the rivers Nunez and Pongas full of renegade European and American slave-traders; the trade was said to be carried on “to an extent that almost staggers belief.” Down to 1824 or 1825, reports from all quarters prove this activity in slave-trading.

The execution of the laws within the country exhibits grave defects and even criminal negligence. Attorney-General Wirt finds it necessary to assure collectors, in 1819, that “it is against public policy to dispense with prosecutions for violation of the law to prohibit the Slave trade.” One district attorney writes: “It appears to be almost impossible to enforce the laws of the United States against offenders after the negroes have been landed in the state.” Again, it is asserted that “when vessels engaged in the slave trade have been detained by the American cruisers, and sent into the slave-holding states, there appears at once a difficulty in securing the freedom to these captives which the laws of the United States have decreed for them.” In some cases, one man would smuggle in the Africans and hide them in the woods; then his partner would “rob” him, and so all trace be lost. Perhaps 350 Africans were officially reported as brought in contrary to law from 1818 to 1820: the absurdity of this figure is apparent.

A circular letter to the marshals, in 1821, brought reports of only a few well-known cases, like that of the “General Ramirez;” the marshal of Louisiana had “no information.”

97. HOUSE REPORTS, 17th Congress 1st session, II. No. 92, pages 5-6. The slavers were the “Ramirez,” “Endymion,” “Esperanza,” “Plattsburg,” “Science,” “Alexander,” “Eugene,” “Mathilde,” “Daphne,” “Eliza,” and “La Pensée.” In these 573 Africans were taken. The naval officers were greatly handicapped by the size of the ships, etc. (cf. FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), pages 33-41). They nevertheless acted with great zeal.


100. HOUSE DOCUMENT, 18th Congress 1st session, VI. No. 119, page 13.


102. OPINIONS OF ATTORNEYS-GENERAL, V. 717.

103. R.W. Habersham to the Secretary of the Navy, August, 1821; reprinted in FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 47.

104. FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 42.

105. FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 43.

There appears to be little positive evidence of a large illicit importation into the country for a decade after 1825. It is hardly possible, however, considering the activity in the trade, that slaves were not largely imported. Indeed, when we note how the laws were continually broken in other respects, absence of evidence of petty smuggling becomes presumptive evidence that collusive or tacit understanding of officers and citizens allowed the trade to some extent.\footnote{108} Finally, it must be noted that during all this time scarcely a man suffered for participating in the trade, beyond the loss of the Africans and, more rarely, of his ship. Red-handed slavers, caught in the act and convicted, were too often, like La Coste of South Carolina, the subjects of executive clemency.\footnote{109} In certain cases there were those who even had the effrontery to ask Congress to cancel their own laws. For instance, in 1819 a Venezuelan privateer, secretly fitted out and manned by Americans in Baltimore, succeeded in capturing several American, Portuguese, and Spanish slavers, and appropriating the slaves; being finally wrecked herself, she transferred her crew and slaves to one of her prizes, the “Antelope,” which was eventually captured by a United States cruiser and the 280 Africans sent to Georgia. After much litigation, the United States Supreme Court ordered those captured from Spaniards to be surrendered, and the others to be returned to Africa. By some mysterious process, only 139 Africans now remained, 100 of whom were sent to Africa. The Spanish claimants of the remaining thirty-nine sold them to a certain Mr. Wilde, who gave bond to transport them out of the country. Finally, in December, 1827, there came an innocent petition to Congress to \textit{cancel this bond}.\footnote{110} A bill to that effect passed and was approved, May 2, 1828,\footnote{111} and in consequence these Africans remained as slaves in Georgia.

\footnote{107} FRIENDS’ VIEW OF THE AFRICAN SLAVE-TRADE (1824), page 42.
\footnote{108} A few accounts of captures here and there would make the matter less suspicious; these, however, do not occur. How large this suspected illicit traffic was, it is of course impossible to say; there is no reason why it may not have reached many hundreds per year.
\footnote{109} Cf. editorial in \textit{Niles’s Register}, XXII. 114. Cf. also the following instances of pardons: —
\footnote{111} PRESIDENT JEFFERSON: March 1, 1808, Phillip M. Topham, convicted for “carrying on an illegal slave-trade” (pardoned twice).
\footnote{110} PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, I. 146, 148-9.
\footnote{140} PRESIDENT MADISON: July 29, 1809, fifteen vessels arrived at New Orleans from Cuba, with 666 white persons and 683 negroes. Every penalty incurred under the Act of 1807 was remitted. (Note: “Several other pardons of this nature were granted.”)
\footnote{139} PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, I. 179.
\footnote{138} November 8, 1809, John Hopkins and Lewis Le Roy, convicted for importing a slave. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, I. 184-5.
\footnote{137} February 12, 1810, William Sewall, convicted for importing slaves. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, I. 194, 235, 240.
\footnote{136} May 5, 1812, William Babbit, convicted for importing slaves. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, I. 248.
\footnote{135} PRESIDENT MONROE: June 11, 1822, Thomas Shields, convicted for bringing slaves into New Orleans. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 15.
\footnote{134} August 24, 1822, J.F. Smith, sentenced to five years’ imprisonment and $3000 fine; served twenty-five months and was then pardoned. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 22.
\footnote{133} July 23, 1823, certain parties liable to penalties for introducing slaves into Alabama. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 63.
\footnote{132} August 15, 1823, owners of schooner “Mary,” convicted of importing slaves. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 66.
\footnote{131} PRESIDENT J.Q. ADAMS: March 4, 1826, Robert Perry; his ship was forfeited for slave-trading. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 140.
\footnote{130} January 17, 1827, Jesse Perry; forfeited ship, and was convicted for introducing slaves. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 158.
\footnote{129} February 13, 1827, Zenas Winston; incurred penalties for slave-trading. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 161. The four following cases are similar to that of Winston: —
\footnote{142} February 24, 1827, John Tucker and William Morbon. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 162.
\footnote{141} March 25, 1828, Joseph Badger. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 192.
\footnote{140} February 19, 1829, L.R. Wallace. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 215.
\footnote{139} PRESIDENT JACKSON: Five cases. PARDONS AND REMISSIONS, IV. 225, 270, 301, 393, 440.

The above cases were taken from manuscript copies of the Washington records, made by Mr. W.C. Endicott, Jr., and kindly loaned me.
On the whole, it is plain that, although in the period from 1807 to 1820 Congress laid down broad lines of legislation sufficient, save in some details, to suppress the African slave trade to America, yet the execution of these laws was criminally lax. Moreover, by the facility with which slavers could disguise their identity, it was possible for them to escape even a vigorous enforcement of our laws. This situation could properly be met only by energetic and sincere international cooperation. 112

W.E. Burghardt Du Bois: The long and open agitation for the reopening of the slave-trade, together with the fact that the South had been more or less familiar with violations of the laws since 1808, led to such a remarkable increase of illicit traffic and actual importations in the decade 1850-1860, that the movement may almost be termed a reopening of the slave-trade. In the foreign slave-trade our own officers continue to report "how shamefully our flag has been used;" 113 and British officers write "that at least one half of the successful part of the slave trade is carried on under the American flag," and this because "the number of American cruisers on the station is so small, in proportion to the immense extent of the slave-dealing coast." 114 The fitting out of slavers became a flourishing business in the United States, and centred at New York City. "Few of our readers," writes a periodical of the day, "are aware of the extent to which this infernal traffic is carried on, by vessels clearing from New York, and in close alliance with our legitimate trade; and that down-town merchants of wealth and respectability are extensively engaged in buying and selling African Negroes, and have been, with comparatively little interruption, for an indefinite number of years." 115 Another periodical says: "The number of persons engaged in the slave-trade, and the amount of capital embarked in it, exceed our powers of calculation. The city of New York has been until of late [1862] the principal port of the world for this infamous commerce; although the cities of Portland and Boston are only second to her in that distinction. Slave dealers added largely to the wealth of our commercial metropolis; they contributed liberally to the treasuries of political organizations, and their bank accounts were largely depleted to carry elections in New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Connecticut." 116 During eighteen months of the years 1859-1860 eighty-five slavers are reported

111. Statutes at Large, VI. 376.
112. Among interesting minor proceedings in this period were two Senate bills to register slaves so as to prevent illegal importation. They were both dropped in the House; a House proposition to the same effect also came to nothing: Senate Journal, 15th Congress 1st session, pages 147, 152, 157, 165, 170, 188, 201, 203, 232, 237; 15th Congress 2d session, pages 63, 74, 77, 202, 207, 285, 291, 297; House Journal, 15th Congress 1st session, page 332; 15th Congress 2d session, pages 303, 305, 316; 16th Congress 1st session, page 150. Another proposition was contained in the Meigs resolution presented to the House, Feb. 5, 1820, which proposed to devote the public lands to the suppression of the slave-trade. This was ruled out of order. It was presented again and laid on the table in 1821: House Journal, 16th Congress 1st session, pages 196, 200, 227; 16th Congress 2d session, page 238.
to have been fitted out in New York harbor,\textsuperscript{117} and these alone transported from 30,000 to 60,000 slaves annually.\textsuperscript{118} The United States deputy marshal of that district declared in 1856 that the business of fitting out slavers “was never prosecuted with greater energy than at present. The occasional interposition of the legal authorities exercises no apparent influence for its suppression. It is seldom that one or more vessels cannot be designated at the wharves, respecting which there is evidence that she is either in or has been concerned in the Traffic.”\textsuperscript{119} On the coast of Africa “it is a well-known fact that most of the Slave ships which visit the river are sent from New York and New Orleans.”\textsuperscript{120}

The absence of United States war-ships at the Brazilian station enabled American smugglers to run in cargoes, in spite of the prohibitory law. One cargo of five hundred slaves was landed in 1852, and the Correio Mercantil regrets “that it was the flag of the United States which covered this act of piracy, sustained by citizens of that great nation.”\textsuperscript{121} When the Brazil trade declined, the illicit Cuban trade greatly increased, and the British consul reported: “Almost all the slave expeditions for some time past have been fitted out in the United States, chiefly at New York.”\textsuperscript{122}

February: On \textit{St. Helena}, the foundation stone for Country Church was laid.

August 28, Thursday: Richard Wagner’s \textit{Lohengrin}, a romantische Oper was performed for the initial time, at the Hoftheater in Weimar, Germany, despite the fact that the author, after the failure of the German revolution, was still in hiding in \textit{Switzerland}. It was directed by Franz Liszt, and this was of course \textit{Johann Wolfgang von Goethe’s} birthday. The theater was full of artistic luminaries including \textit{Giacomo Meyerbeer}, Robert Franz, Joseph Joachim, and Hans von Bülow.

End of the governorship of Major-General Sir Patrick Ross on \textit{St. Helena}.

\textsuperscript{117} New York \textit{Evening Post}; quoted in Lalor, \textit{Cyclopædia}, III. 733.
\textsuperscript{118} Lalor, \textit{Cyclopædia}, III. 733; quoted from a New York paper.
\textsuperscript{119} \textit{FRIENDS’ APPEAL ON BEHALF OF THE COLOURED RACES} (1858), Appendix, page 41; quoted from the \textit{Journal of Commerce}.
\textsuperscript{120} \textit{26TH REPORT OF THE AMERICAN ANTI-SLAVERY SOCIETY}, pages 53-4; quoted from the African correspondent of the Boston \textit{Journal}. From April, 1857, to May, 1858, twenty-one of twenty-two slavers which were seized by British cruisers proved to be American, from New York, Boston, and New Orleans. Cf. \textit{25TH REPORT OF THE AMERICAN ANTI-SLAVERY SOCIETY}, page 122. De Bow estimated in 1856 that forty slavers cleared annually from Eastern harbors, clearing yearly $17,000,000: \textit{De Bow’s Review}, XXII. 430-1.
\textsuperscript{121} \textit{SENATE EXECUTIVE DOCUMENT}, 33d Congress, 1st session, VIII. No. 47, page 13.
\textsuperscript{122} \textit{HOUSE EXECUTIVE DOCUMENT}, 34th Congress, 1st session, XII. No. 105, page 38.
Coffee grown on the Bamboo Hedge Estate at Sandy Bay on St. Helena won a premier award at the Great Exhibition in the Crystal Palace.

Joseph Lockwood’s GUIDE TO ST. HELENA, DESCRIPTIVE AND HISTORICAL, WITH A VISIT TO LONGWOOD, AND NAPOLEON’S TOMB (St. Helena: Printed and published by Geo. Gibb).

(You will note that this author makes no mention of any giant tortoises being used as lawn ornaments.)

July 18, Friday: Treaty negotiations began at Traverse des Sioux. James M. Goodhue, who had established the 1st Minnesota newspaper at St. Paul during April 1849, was taking notes. The treaty would be signed on July 23d.

Colonel Sir Thomas Gore Browne took over as Governor of St. Helena. During his administration the existing prison in Jamestown would be supplemented with a model prison constructed mainly of timber sent out from England, designed by Colonel Jebb. The cost of this additional prison at Rupert’s Valley, and of a hospital where seamen were treated free of charge, would be met with a duty on merchant ships of 1 penny per ton.

July 26, Saturday: Henry Thoreau went on a trip about which he would write in CAPE COD:

Called on Capt. Snow who remembered hearing fishermen say that they “fitted out at Thoreau’s”—remembered him. He had commanded a packet bet. Boston or New York & England—spoke of the wave which he sometimes met on the Atlantic coming against the wind & which indicated that the wind was blowing from an opposite quarter at a distance—The undulation travelling faster than the wind. They see Cape Cod loom here—Thought the Bay bet. here & Cape Ann 30 fathom deep—bet here & Cape Cod 60 or 70 fathoms. The “Annual of Sci. Discovery” for 1851 says quoting a Mr A. G. Findley “waves travel very great distances, and are often raised by distant hurricanes, having been felt simultaneously at St. Helena & Ascension, though 600 miles apart, and it is probable that ground swells often originate at the Cape of Good Hope, 3000 miles distant.”

Sailors tell of tide-rips Some are thought to be occasioned by earthquakes
The Ocean at Cohasset did not look as if any were ever shipwrecked in it—not a vestige of a wreck left—It was not grand & sublime now but beautiful The water held in the little hollows of the rocks on the receding of the...
tide is so crystal-pure that you cannot believe it salt. but wish to drink it
The architect of a Minot rock light house might profitably spend a day studying the worn rocks of Cohasset
shore & learn the power of the waves-- See what kind of sand the sea is using to grind them down.
A fine delicate sea weed which some properly enough call sea-green.-- Saw here the stag-horn or velvet sumack
Rhus typhinum so called from form of young branches --a size larger than the Rhus glabrum common with us.--
The Plantago Maritima or Sea Plantain properly named --I guessed its name before I knew what it was called
by botanists. The Am. Sea Rocket --Bunias edentula I suppose it was that I saw the succulent plant with much
cut leaves & small pinkish? flowers.

September: On St. Helena, the initial services in the new Country Church.

November: At this point New Zealand flax was growing wild, and thriving, in every part of St. Helena.

(You will note that this missionary makes no mention of having tripped over any giant tortoises making themselves useful as lawn ornaments.)
June: When a museum opened on St. Helena its exhibits included a sea serpent and a flying lizard. Were these extincted local species?

December 15, Friday: When King Kamehameha III of Hawaii died in Honolulu, he was succeeded by a nephew as Kamehameha IV.

Colonel Sir Thomas Gore Browne, who had initiated the 1st village at Rupert’s Bay, stepped down as governor of St. Helena.
July: Writing in his diary, a New-York clerk, Edward Neufville Tailer, Jr., took note of the dozens of business failures and made a comment about the barrage of articles in the gazettes reporting one or another suicide of the era: “The alarming increase of suicides in this country, is ... generally remarked upon by the newspapers. Scarcely a day passes, in which there are not one or more deaths from self destruction.”

At St. Helena, a humpback whale was taken just off the wharf. Was this one of those cetaceans who inexplicably commit suicide by beaching themselves?
January: The initial St. Helena postage stamp was issued — a 6d blue.

For three days waves surged entirely across Matinicus Rock, removing not only the old wooden lighthouse structure but also its rock foundation. The family of the lightkeeper, however, was relatively safe in the new granite structure.

August 28, Thursday: Henry Thoreau commented in his journal in a manner that might indicate that he had heard an account that there was a turtle still on the island of St. Helena who had met Napoléon. (Be aware that Henry knew that a turtle is not a tortoise, and be aware that in any event this is not the giant tortoise Dipsochelys hololissa (nicknamed by Sir Stewart Spencer Davis in the 1930s Jonathan), who has since lived on the island, for that creature was born in 1832 well after the death of the former emperor and anyway was not brought there from the Seychelles until 1882. In all likelihood Thoreau had never heard this urban legend about this giant tortoise, and all he meant by this “One turtle knows several Napoleons” aphorism was that turtles tend to live considerably longer lives than humans.)

Aug. 28, First watermelon.

P.M. — To tortoise eggs, Marlborough road. Potentilla Norvegica again. I go over linnæa sproutlands. The panicled cornel berries are whitening, but already mostly fallen. As usual the leaves of this shrub, though it is so wet, are rolled like corn, showing the paler under sides. At this season it would seem that rain, frost, and drought all produce similar effects. Now the black cherries in sprout-lands are in their prime, and the black choke-berries just after huckleberries and blueberries. They are both very abundant this year. The branches droop with cherries. Those on some trees are very superior to others. The bushes are weighed down with choke-berries, which no creature appears to gather. This crop is as abundant as the huckleberries have been. They have a sweet and pleasant taste enough, but leave a mass of dry pulp in the mouth. But it is worth the while to see their profusion, if only to know what nature can do. Huckleberries are about given up, low blueberries more or less shrivelled, low blackberries done, high blackberries still to be had. Viburnum nudum berries are beginning; I already see a few shrivelled purple ones amid the light green. Poke berries also begun.

A goldfinch [American Goldfinch, Carduelis tristis] twitters away from every thistle now and soon returns to it when I am past. I see the ground strewn with the thistle-down they have scattered on every side. At Tarbell's andromeda swamp. A probable Bidens connata or small chrysanthemoides.

I open the painted tortoise nest of June 10th, and find a young turtle partly out of his shell. He is roundish and the sternum clear uniform pink. The marks on the sides are pink. The upper shell is fifteen sixteenths of an inch plus by thirteen sixteenths. He is already wonderfully strong and precocious. Though those eyes never saw the light before, he watches me very warily, even at a distance. With what vigor he crawls out of the hole I have made, over opposing weeds! He struggles in my fingers with great strength; has none of the tenderness of infancy. His whole snout is convex, and curved like a beak. Having attained the surface, he pauses and warily watches me. In the meanwhile another has put his head out of his shell, but I bury the latter up and leave them. Meanwhile a striped squirrel sits on the wall across the road under a pine, eying me, with his check-pouches stuffed with nuts and puffed out ludicrously, as if he had the mumps, while the wall is strewn with the dry brown husks of hazelnuts he has stripped. A bird, perhaps a thrasher, in the pine close above him is hopping restlessly and scolding at him.

June, July, and August, the tortoise eggs are hatching a few, inches beneath the surface in sandy fields. You tell of active labors, of works of art, and wars the past summer; meanwhile the tortoise eggs underlie this turmoil. What events have transpired on the lit and airy surface three inches above them! Sumner knocked down; Kansas living an age of suspense. Think what is a summer to them! How many worthy men have died and had their funeral sermons preached since I saw the mother turtle bury her eggs here! They contained an undeveloped liquid then, they are now turtles. June, July, and August — the livelong summer, — what are they with their heats and fevers but sufficient to hatch a tortoise in. Be not in haste; mind your private affairs. Consider the turtle. A whole summer June, July, and August — is not too good nor too much to hatch a turtle in. Perchance you have worried, yourself, despairsed of the world, meditated the end of life, and all things seemed rushing to
destruction; but nature has steadily and serenely advanced with a turtle's pace. The young turtle spends its infancy within its shell. It gets experience and learns the ways of the world through that wall. While it rests warily on the edge of its hole, rash schemes are undertaken by men and fail. Has not the tortoise also learned the true value of time? You go to India and back, and the turtle eggs in your field are still unhatched. French empires rise or fall, but the turtle is developed only so fast. What's a summer? Time for a turtle's eggs to hatch. So is the turtle developed, fitted to endure, for he outlives twenty French dynasties. One turtle knows several Napoleons. They have seen no berries, had no cares, yet has not the great world existed for them as much as for you?

Euphorbia hypericifolia, how long? It has pretty little white and also rose-colored petals, or, as they are now called, involucre. Stands six inches high, regularly curving, with large leaves prettily arranged at an angle with both a horizontal and perpendicular line. See the great oval masses of scarlet berries of the arum now in the meadows. Trillium fruit, long time.

The river being thus high, for ten days or more I have seen little parcels of shells left by the muskrats. So they eat them thus early. Peppermint, how long? Maybe earlier than I have thought, for the mowers clip it. The bright china-colored blue berries of the Cornus sericea begin to show themselves along the river, amid their red-brown leaves, — the kinnikinnic of the Indians.

October 10, Friday: Sir Edward Hay Drummond Hay took over as the new governor of St. Helena. “Hay Town,” an area at Rupert’s Bay, would be created during his administration. “Drummond Hay Square,” an area of affordable housing in Jamestown, would also originate during his administration.
April: The cornerstone of St. John’s Church on St. Helena was ceremonially laid by Lady Drummond Hay.
Queen Victoria granted the right to purchase and hold Longwood House and the Tomb on St. Helena to Napoléon III of France and his heirs in perpetuity (the Tricolor yet flies over these two small patches of “French Territory”).

1858

(There was no mention of title in regard to so many head of giant tortoises in use as lawn ornaments.)

August 2, Monday: As a result of the Sepoy uprisings of 1857, Great Britain instituted the Government of India Act. As of November 1st, the Mogul Empire and the British East India Company would dissolve as the British government instituted direct rule over India through a Viceroy.

The British Parliament organized the territory of New Caledonia into the Crown Colony of British Columbia.

August 2, P.M. – Up Assabet.
Landed at the Bath-Place and walked the length of Shad-bush Meadow. I noticed meandering down that meadow, which is now quite dry, a very broad and distinct musquash-trail, where they went and came continually when it was wet or under water in the winter or spring. These trails are often nine or ten inches wide and half a dozen deep, passing under a root and the lowest overhanging shrubs, where they glided along on their bellies underneath everything. I traced one such trail forty rods, till it ended in a large cabin three feet high, with blueberry bushes springing still from the top, and other similar trails led off from it on opposite sides. Near the cabin they had burrowed or worn them out nine or ten inches deep, as if this now deserted castle had been a place of great resort. Their skins used to be worth fifty cents apiece.
I see there what I take to be a marsh hawk of this year, hunting by itself. It has not learned to be very shy yet, so that we repeatedly get near it. What a rich brown bird! almost, methinks, with purple reflections.
What I have called the Panicum latifolium has now its broad leaves, striped with red, abundant under Turtle Bank, above Bath-Place.
November 1, Monday: Governor-General Charles John Canning, Viscount Canning of India proclaimed Queen Victoria as sovereign over all India. All powers and territories held by the British East India Company would henceforward inhere to the British crown. Viscount Canning would serve as the initial British Viceroy of India.

In Boston, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes dated the preface to his initial collected edition of his occasional “Breakfast-Table” essays for The Atlantic Monthly, titled *The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table*. This was the year of appearance of his “The Deacon’s Masterpiece, or ‘The Wonderful One-Hoss Shay’,” a frontal mockery of Calvinism.
Una Hawthorne was diagnosed as a victim of the “Roman fever,” that is, malaria.

**The Marble Faun:** The final charm is bestowed by the Malaria. There is a piercing, thrilling, delicious kind of regret in the idea of so much beauty thrown away, or only enjoyable at its half-development, in winter and early spring, and never to be dwelt amongst, as the home-scenery of any human being. For if you come hither in summer, and stray through these glades in the golden sunset, Fever walks arm in arm with you, and Death awaits you at the end of the dim vista. Thus the scene is like Eden in its loveliness; like Eden, too, in the fatal spell that removes it beyond the scope of man’s actual possessions.
October: The Diocese of St. Helena had been established by Queen’s Order in Council, and included the islands of Ascension and Tristan da Cunha, and (until 1869) the British residents of Rio de Janeiro and other towns on the eastern seaboard of South America, as well as the Falkland Islands. At this point the initial Bishop, Dr. Piers Claughton, consecrated in Westminster Abbey, disembarked at his destination. He would remark brightly in a letter home that it was “so English in its character as to make us feel ourselves at home.”


December: On St. Helena, a Fire Association was formed and St. Paul’s Church became a cathedral.

In a sermon, the Reverend Moncure Daniel Conway welcomed Charles Darwin’s newly published THE ORIGIN OF SPECIES.... He considered that here was scientific proof that everything was inevitably going to go on going to get better and better. He understood not a word of what he had read.123

123. He translated the most utterly nonprovidential of all science into the very most providential! A quarter-century later he would learn that in his initial enthusiasm for biological progress, he had neglected to observe “that it was possible for man to develop himself and his world downward.” –Well, nobody ever accused this gent of being excessively bright, though of course he could think very well on his feet when the situation demanded this, and also could think very well with his feet when that was what the situation seemed to demand.
February: The initial issue of the St. Helena Record.

Henry Thoreau assessed the limits of scientific discourse, finding that “our science, so called, is always more barren and mixed up with error than our sympathies are.”

September: The HMS Euryalus arrived at St. Helena with Prince Alfred, one of Queen Victoria’s sons (along with a bunch of ordinary blokes).

(Did a giant tortoise or two sight Prince Alfred? The record does not indicate this.)
May: The initial publication of the St. Helena Guardian.

June: A service at St. James’s Church on St. Helena was somewhat interrupted by a discovery that white ants had eaten into a desk, and a Bible inside that desk.
February: Alfred Russel Wallace left the Malay Archipelago. During his 8-year stay he had collected 125,660 specimens (mostly birds and insects).

On St. Helena, the initial worship service at St. Matthews Church.

April: At a meeting in Jamestown, St. Helenians voted to convey to Queen Victoria a request that their island be renamed “Prince Albert Island” to honor her recently deceased husband Prince Consort Albert of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha (due to objections from members of the clergy, this petition could not be brought to the attention of the bereaved widow).

October: St. James Church on St. Helena needed to be closed for repairs after its roof collapsed.

124. “St. Helenians” is a neologism used in this database. The inhabitants of the island are known among themselves as “Saints.”
May: During a severe epidemic of the flu St. Helenians were fed at soup kitchens.

July 3: The end of the administration of Sir Edward Hay Drummond Hay as governor of St. Helena, and the beginning of the administration of Admiral Sir Charles Elliot.

After the race war it was open season in Minnesota. Near Hutchinson, an Indian man and boy were detected by a Minnesota farmer picking raspberries in the dusk near a poplar grove adjoining Scattered Lake, so of course the farmer stalked them with a rifle. He was able to get one from ambush, first in the groin and then in the chest. The boy could be heard crawling through the bushes to him, giving him water, covering him with a blanket, and the farmer was able to hear him saying something to the boy. Later it became clear that they had been a 53-year-old father and his 16-year-old son, and that before crawling away through the bushes the boy had taken a fresh pair of moccasins from a pouch and placed them on his father’s feet. No-one had been able to get a clear shot at him. The orphan would be soon caught starving by the army, after having managed with his last cartridge to kill a wolf to gnaw upon, and he would readily confess that he was Wowinape “The Appearing One” or “Thomas Wakeman,” son of headman Taoyateduta Little Crow “Our Red Nation,” and that
it had been he, that dusk, who had been the other raspberry picker who had gotten away.\footnote{Wowinape’s account is in the St. Peter Tribune of August 19, 1863.} The boy would turn 17 years old by the time he would be tried and sentenced by a military court to be \textit{hanged}.\footnote{He would then be reprieved as he had committed no offense other than being with his father when his father was killed. The crippled father also had committed no offense, having great difficulty holding a weapon and always having spoken for moderation and restraint and accommodation and negotiation — but then he was already dead and his name was already detested and his body parts were already objects of contempt and it didn’t matter.} After being released from the Sequestration Facility to the Indian reservation, Thomas Wakeman, a Presbyterian, would devote his life to the YMCA.

But the above is not important as it was not what was happening to white people. (Only what happens to white people is important.)

The day’s action at Gettysburg:
A report from Walt Whitman:

“Specimen Days”

This forenoon, for more than an hour, again long strings of cavalry, several regiments, very fine men and horses, four or five abreast. I saw them in Fourteenth street, coming in town from north. Several hundred extra horses, some of the mares with colts, trotting along. (Appear’d to be a number of prisoners too.) How inspiriting always the cavalry regiments. Our men are generally well mounted, feel good, are young, gay on the saddle, their blankets in a roll behind them, their sabres clanking at their sides. This noise and movement and the tramp of many horses’ hoofs has a curious effect upon one. The bugles play — presently you hear them afar off, deaden’d, mix’ed with other noises. Then just as they had all pass’d, a string of ambulances commenc’d from the other [Page 729] way, moving up Fourteenth street north, slowly wending along, bearing a large lot of wounded to the hospitals.
April: The brewery on St. Helena was destroyed by fire.

There hadn’t been any slavery on the island of St. Helena, for a good long time, and notice, this wondrous thing had been achieved without any recourse to civil war. However, during this month, in the midst of a civil war, when an amendment to the United States Constitution abolishing slavery was passed by the federal Senate, that proposal would die there (during June it would fail to obtain the 2/3ds vote required to pass in the House of Representatives — it would not be enacted by the House until the afternoon of January 31, 1865, when a vote would be obtained of Yeas 119, Nays 56, not voting 8).

“Neither slavery nor involuntary servitude, except as punishment for crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted, shall exist within the United States . . .”

July: When a new signal gun was mounted at High Knoll on St. Helena, it wasn’t the sort of thingie that fired deadly projectiles at anyone.

Rebel forces threatened the District of Columbia as, to relieve the pressure on General Lee’s army, General Jubal Early led his units into Maryland. Firing real bullets, they would get within five miles of the federal capital before being turned back.

September: The Standard Bank of South Africa opened an outlet on St. Helena (it would close during August 1865).
April: The house of Mr. Porteous, in which Napoléon had slept for his initial night on St. Helena, was at this point consumed by fire.

The remaining military formations of the Confederate States of America would be stacking arms and heading home between the end of this month and the end of the following month (President Jefferson Davis would sneak off but would be taken into custody in Georgia on May 10th).

August: Governor Admiral Sir Charles Elliot ordered the creation of a savings bank (now Bank of St. Helena).
August: On St. Helena, high winds removed the roofs of several houses, while at Plantation they blew down 150 trees. However, during this particular August there was no flood or drought.

December: Waldo Emerson lectured in Cleveland, St. Louis, Chicago, Davenport, etc.

A military prisoner torched the wooden gaol in Rupert’s Valley, St. Helena.

Manganese ore was discovered on the island.
Alfred Russel Wallace received a medal from the Royal Society.

Governor Admiral Sir Charles Elliot schemed for St. Helena to make itself an exporter of quinine, and the Royal Botanical Gardens at Kew supplied cinchona trees (but this wouldn’t happen).
An earthquake tremor was felt on St. Helena.

August 15, Sunday: The fishes of the Red Sea joined those of the Mediterranean courtesy of the Suez Canal (this would come to be known by a fancy name, “Lessepsian migration”).

Hey, so what that the Red Sea is higher than the Mediterranean Ocean –just as had been pointed out in 1798 by Napoleon’s surveyor J.-B. Le Père– and henceforward its waters would pour northward! What could go wrong, heh heh heh?

October: Sparrows, green linnets, blackbirds, thrushes, and a starling were introduced to St. Helena. (Clare Miller of the Environmental Agency at Exeter now reports that “Saint Helena’s wildlife has been ravaged by species introduced to the island. Goats, gorse, grasses, and cage birds have all been liberated on the island where they have wreaked havoc with the native species. Saint Helena is a noted extinction hotspot, driven largely by non-native species, and the native birds have suffered more here than many other islands. Of eight species of bird confined to the island, seven have become extinct since the island’s discovery in 1502.”)
November 17, Wednesday: The Suez Canal was opened in the presence of Empress Eugénie of France, Emperor Franz Joseph II of Austria-Hungary, and (of course) Ferdinand de Lesseps. Ships travelling between Europe and the Far East would no longer have to steam around the massive obstacle of Africa.

(Fish traveling from the Red Sea into the Mediterranean Ocean would no longer have to swim around the massive obstacle of Africa. Nor ships! St. Helena had become an out-of-the-way place — Britain withdrew a naval squadron.)
May: Some 300 poor St. Helenians at a public meeting told the government they wanted to emigrate. Surely someplace else has got to be better than this place!

127. “St. Helenians” is a neologism used in this database. The inhabitants of the island are known among themselves as “Saints.”
Royal Engineers constructed “Jacob’s Ladder” of 700 steps on St. Helena (one step having been covered over in later repairs, this is now 699 count-'em steps).

July: In the downpours on St. Helena, dead animals were floating into The Run. Extensive flooding created homelessness.

December: Jacob’s Ladder, that had been purchased in 1832 from the St. Helena Railway Company by the East India Company for £882, was at this point reconstructed at a cost of £846.

The Ancient Order of Foresters was formed.
January: A St. Helena Mutual Emigration Society was formed, to assist those who needed to emigrate to find work.

March: Alfred Russel Wallace moved to Grays in Essex.

On St. Helena, the Hussey Charity assumed responsibility for running the Parish School of St Matthews.

September: 280 St. Helenians departed on a ship heading toward South Africa. Wave at us before you drop below the horizon, folks!
Theodore Sedgwick Fay’s FIRST STEPS IN GEOGRAPHY.

Hudson Ralph Janisch became the sole St. Helenian to serve as governor since the island came under the Crown in 1834 (this offers you an insight into how geostrategically important the island had become to Britain, upon the opening of the Suez Canal). It would be during this guy’s period of office (until 1884) that Jonathan the giant tortoise would be brought ashore.

February: A heavy flood at Trap Cot on St. Helena carried away a house and its 9 occupants, 7 of whom perished (as we are all aware, steep hillsides stripped bare of all vegetation will do this sort of thing to you).

Nathan Johnson wrote from 21 Seventh St. in New Bedford to Gerrit Smith, in part to plead with that rich man for “a loose, unappropriated greenback, to help me through the present year; if I should tarry longer things will grow better for me, and 78 years tells me I need but little here.”

I know you do not remember of having seen me, and there are but few living that could tell you anything about me.... To our Labouring friend F. Douglass I cannot refer you, for a fellow townsman was at Washington, not long since, where he conversed with him, and mention’d me to him, and he said he did not know me; but I will refer you to his Narrative, in which you will see the name, Nathan Johnson.

(Clearly, Frederick Douglass, once reminded, was able to recover a memory of the man who had assigned to him his new free name, and who had been the president of a national convention which he had attended, for prior to his death in 1880 he would on several occasions visit him in New Bedford.)

August: 253 St. Helenians emigrated to the Cape of Good Hope.

November: 442 St. Helenians departed, waving frantically, heading for South Africa/Natal (more than 9,000 nautical miles).
January: A flax industry was initiated on St. Helena when 100 acres were planted by the Colonial & Foreign Fibre Company. The 1st flax-pounding mill, consisting of a 7HP steam engine and 3 stamping machines, was constructed in Jamestown. A problem of transport from fields to mill would be one reason why this initial attempt at an industry would collapse in an industry that eventually would succeed.

This record of local fauna reported that “Turtle are taken at St. Helena, generally on the surface of the water, near the leeward coast; about six or eight of a very large size are caught and brought to market during the year.”

–But a turtle is not a tortoise, and a native species is not an intrusive species. This record of local fauna also reported that “Occasionally a small imported species of Tortoise is seen in the Island, but they do not appear to live long.” There’s nothing here about Jonathan the giant tortoise, lawn ornament of the Governor’s house.

October: In yet another of the periodic attempts to utilize the endless horizon around St. Helena, the barque *Elizabeth* was fitted out as a whaler manned by islanders some of whom had experience aboard American whalers in these waters (however, by this time the South Atlantic whale fishery was in decline and so the venture would fail).
July: Alfred Russel Wallace moved to Rose Hill in Dorking.

The initial consignment of flax, 100 bales each weighing 4 cwt, from the Colonial Fibre Company of St. Helena.
Of two specimens of Aldabra giant tortoise on the lawn at Plantation House on St. Helena—acquired during what era no-one knows—one died.\textsuperscript{128}

What has come to be termed the “Bone War” between Edward Drinker Cope and Othniel Charles Marsh war intensified, with the discovery of major dinosaur localities at Canon City, Morrison, and Como Bluff.

Comparative anatomy professor François Louis Paul Gervais undertook thin-section microscopy studies of fossil eggs (his work would largely be forgotten until Roy Chapman Andrews would discover dinosaur eggs in Mongolia during the 1920s).

A new \textit{Archaeopteryx} fossil was discovered in Solnhofen, complete with a toothy jaw. This well-preserved fossil, which will become known as the Berlin \textit{Archaeopteryx}, supported Thomas Henry Huxley’s previous observations about its reptilian affinities.

\textbf{Karl August Möbius} used the term \textit{biocoenosis} to point up the fact that living beings do not live independently, but group themselves into plant and animal communities.

July: St. Helena’s Lemon Valley became a quarantine station as \textit{scarlet fever} ravaged Portsmouth and \textit{measles} ravaged Cape Town.

\textbf{THE SCIENCE OF 1877}

\textsuperscript{128} Please note that it would never have been any big deal, to acquire some of these giant tortoises as curios and lawn ornaments for one’s greensward on an ocean island estate, for sailors of that era were in the habit of catching the giants on islands in the Indian Ocean and storing them aboard their vessels upside down, to be killed and cooked as the occasion arose. No special coordination would have been necessary! Anyone who wanted to make a pet of one of these awesomely ugly animals would need only to trot down to the port with a cow on halter, and trade the cow for one or another giant lying upside-down under a canvas upon the deck of some barque that happened to be in port that day.
March: The St. Helena Church Provident Society for Women was formed.

This Daguerreotype was presented to the Kansas State Historical Society by Colonel Thomas Wentworth Higginson, leader of the 1st South Carolina Volunteer regiment of black Union soldiers. Higginson’s inscription: “Daguerreotype of one of the first Free-State batteries in Kansas. Presented to T.W. Higginson by one of the officers, at Topeka, Kansas, in September, 1856.”

April: There was much damage and 2 lives were lost during a flood in Jamestown, St. Helena.

Thomas Wentworth Higginson returned to Europe (until October), revisiting literary friends he had made on his initial visit during the summer of 1872, touring England and Scotland and in addition France and Germany and this time meeting in addition Matthew Arnold, Victor Hugo, and Ivan Turgenev.
February: Continuation of serial publication of Fyodor Mikhaylovich Dostoevski’s The Brothers Karamazov in The Russian Herald: Book III, start (Alesha returns to the monastery. Liza’s letter.)

Spanish, Mexican, and South American silver dollars would no longer be allowed as legal tender on St. Helena.
July: Continuation of serial publication of Fyodor Mikhaylovich Dostoevski’s *The Brothers Karamazov* in *The Russian Herald*: Book XI, 1-5 (Ivan drawn to Smerdiakov.)

The Empress Eugene, widow of Napoléon III, paid a visit to St. Helena. (On the lawn at Plantation House, was she glimpsed by the antique tortoise who had glimpsed her in-law the exiled emperor Napoleon? — Inquiring minds need to know.)

August: Continuation of serial publication of Fyodor Mikhaylovich Dostoevski’s *The Brothers Karamazov* in *The Russian Herald*: Book XI, 6-10 (Alesha was voicing Ivan’s dilemma, of whether to testify or remain silent).

On St. Helena a pair of storks were sighted, but when one was shot the other simply died. Four ostriches were imported, 2 male and 2 female, but both of the males would die within 10 months.
February: Failure of the Colonial & Foreign Fibre Company that had been cultivating flax on St. Helena.

October: The other giant tortoise died on the lawn at Plantation House. This creature can be accurately attested to more or less have met a Napoléon (whether or not it was old enough to have met the former emperor before his death on St. Helena) for it most likely did sight the Empress Eugene, widow of Napoléon III, who had visited the island during the previous year and assuredly would have been served tea by the governor’s wife.
A giant tortoise nicknamed Jonathan, allegedly born in about 1832, was brought from the Seychelles to St. Helena to replace an ancient tortoise that had died in the previous year at Plantation House. Note carefully that this particular animal had not met any Napoléon, or for that matter any Darwin.

Edward Godfrey, a guidebook author, sensing the desperation of a neglected Nantucket Island, pled with his fellow islanders: “Make [Nantucket] a watering-place, make her a manufacturing town, make her an agricultural town, make her all three, but in heaven’s name make her something!”
May: A theatre was opened in the Jamestown, St. Helena barracks.

Alfred Russel Wallace’s LAND NATIONALISATION.

He argued that government should, long-term, buy out large land holdings and create a rent system which based rents on considerations of location plus the value added by the renter. Wallace espoused the construction of greenbelts and parks, and the legal protection of rural lands and historical monuments.
June: Mary Ann Shadd Cary received her LLB from Howard Law School (she was one of 4 women to graduate from the law school).

The cemetery for paupers and seamen at Half Tree Hollow on St. Helena was full after 675 burials.
January: The attempt to establish a St. Helena Whaling Company failed due to attracting merely 3 subscribers.

July: When St. Helena public funds managed by Deputy Colonial Secretary Knipe were found to be £3,000 short, he was dismissed.

Friedrich Nietzsche went to Sils Maria in Switzerland to work on the manuscript for the 3d book of what would become his ZARATHUSTRA.129

The child is innocence and forgetting, a new beginning, a game, a self-propelled wheel, a first movement, a sacred "Yes."
("On the Three Metamorphoses," Kaufmann translation, page 139)

October: There was a total eclipse of the moon on St. Helena.

December: Frederick Henry Baker became vicar of St. Paul’s Church on St. Helena, the initial islander to attain such office.

Five mynah birds were brought from India to St. Helena by Miss Phoebe Moss and released near her home at The Briars to control pesky cattle ticks. Instead, as might have been anticipated, they would multiply out of control and become an even worse pest.

April: Benjamin Grant’s St. Helena Records: History of St. Helena from 1673 to 1835.

Islanders dispatched a petition to the Secretary of State for the Colonies at London, respectfully requesting that their military governor be replaced by a civil appointment.
January: Charlie Soong and Doctor W.H. Park arrived in Shanghai. The Chinese missionary changed his name from Soon to Soong. He would marry with Ni Kewi-tseng, who had fullsize feet because when her feet had been bound as a child, she had developed a serious infection and fever. Their children would be Ai-ling, Ch’ing-ling, Tseven (“T.V.”), May-ling, Tse-liang (“T.L.”), and Tse-an (“T.A.”).

The *Aurora* caught fire and ran aground near Rupert’s off St. Helena. The *Frank N Thayer* caught fire and sank 700 miles to the southwest although some survivors managed to arrive at the island in an open boat.
June: The St. Helena Whaling Association was dissolved. Emmanuel-Henri-Dieudonné Domenech died in France at the age of 59. (This is according to several printed reference works; however, the Wikipedia entry on him alleges to the contrary that he died on September 7, 1903 and the Handbook of Texas Online alleges to the contrary that he died of apoplexy and was buried at Lyons, France on September 9, 1903 with military honors.)
May: While Lenin was 17 years of age his oldest brother, Aleksandr Ulyanov, was hanged for having participated in an attempt to assassinate Tsar Alexander III, and his sister Anna Ulyanova was banished to a remote rural Ulyanov family estate. During his childhood the book that had had the greatest influence on him had been Harriet Beecher Stowe’s UNCLE TOM’S CABIN, but at this point he was reading the writings of Georgi Plekhanov and Nikolay Chernyshevsky’s 1863 novel WHAT IS TO BE DONE?

November: A Children’s Benefit Society was formed on St. Helena.

A rock fall damaged properties near the Roman Catholic Church.
April: H.W. Scullard robbed the St. Helena Savings Bank, obtaining £165, but would later be arrested.
Francis Galton’s *Natural Inheritance*.

*Napoleon at St. Helena* by Barry Edward O’Meara His Late Surgeon (New York: Scribner and Welford): “December 25, 1816. — Napoleon in very good spirits. Asked many questions in English, which he pronounced as he would have done French; yet the words were correct, and applied in their proper sense.”

There is no mention of giant tortoises.

August: Mail steamers discontinued stopping off at St. Helena on their way to and from Cape Town.

130. This surgeon’s account had originally been published in 1822 as *Voice from St. Helena* by Simpkin, Marshall, and Co.
February: From this point until sometime in May, Alfred Russel Wallace would be presenting testimony to the Royal Commission on Vaccination. He would be putting on the hat of someone who really understood how a statistical validation ought to be conducted, and pointing out tendentious errors in the government’s official calculation of the benefits of universal mandatory vaccination for the smallpox (suspicious errors in the omission of data that did not support the government’s side of the case, plus suspicious “errors” in calculation), but in addition he would be introducing unfortunate new errors of his own (such as the oversight of adding in the same set of datapoints twice in his corrective calculation). At the end of his testimony it would be quite as murky as it had been before whether the existing practice of universal mandatory vaccination was of net benefit or of net harmfulness to society.

King Dinuzulu kaCetshwayo, son of Cetshwayo kaMpande, and his family, including a couple of uncles, were exiled to St. Helena for a period of 9 years. The Zulu royal family would be accommodated at Francis Plain House, Rosemary Hall, and Maldivia House in Jamestown. Dinizulu learned to read and write and play the piano, and would be baptized and confirmed as a Christian by the Bishop:

> The Emperor of the Zulus proved far more amenable than did the Emperor of the French. He did what he was told, never quarrelled with the authorities, and wandered about the Island making friends with all he met.

April: A heavy fall of rocks in Jamestown, St. Helena killed 9 and injured many more (a memorial fountain would be erected in Main Street during September 1891).

Friend Elbert Russell graduated from high school in West Newton, Massachusetts. After a summer visit to his family’s home of origin in Tennessee, and a brief romance there, he would begin studies at Earlham College in North Carolina.

> I have had many a regret that the subject of sex was so covered with vulgarity and filth. It made it difficult to dissociate modesty from shame and to redeem the subject of sex from a sense of evil and degradation. Those who object to sex education in the church and school seem strangely ignorant of the perverted education which children actually get on the subject.
September: Governor William Grey-Wilson dedicated the new fountain in Main Street of Jamestown, in memory of 9 “Saints” killed by the previous year’s rock fall (this commemorative fountain would be removed in 1990).
May: The Arab slavemasters of the Belgian Congo rebelled.

On St. Helena, Reverend Daine experimented with the breeding of silkworms and the cultivation of cotton.
February: On St. Helena, a meteorological station was established at Hutts Gate.

April: 50 St. Helenians emigrated to work in copper mines.


106 St. Helenians departed aboard a ship to South Africa.
July: The St. Helena Rifle Association was formed.

December: King Dinuzulu kaCetshwayo and the Zulu royal family’s captivity on their St. Helena island prison was at an end, and they embarked on the Umbilo for South Africa and freedom.

During the time they were on the Island they were gradually weaned from their uncivilised and savage life, until at the time of their departure they were as much civilized and attached to civilized customs as could be expected in such a short time. This can be said especially of the young Prince, who became more refined, his gentlemanly manners and bearing promising well for the tribe over which he might hold sway. Dinizulu was liked by all who knew him and he left many friends and well wishers in the Island.
April: Joshua Slocum stopped at St. Helena in the yacht *Spray* during the 1st solo circumnavigation of the globe.

Frederik van Eeden and a rich lady purchased adjacent pieces of property outside the city of Amsterdam.
April: Initial meeting of a St. Helena Golf Club.

June: A drainage system was completed in Jamestown, St. Helena carrying waste water in a culvert from Upper Jamestown to the sea front.

September: On St. Helena, due to bubonic plague, quarantine facilities were organized for ships arriving from south and east Asia.

November: The Eastern Telegraph Company brought the initial submarine cable to St. Helena. The far end of this cable was at Cape Town, and this represented the 1st stage in a link north to Ascension Island — and thence to the targeted market, Europe and England.

London’s Strand Magazine reported a “winged cat” or kitten in Wiveliscombe, Somerset, England. The cat appeared normal in every way except for two fur-covered growths sprouting from either side of its mid-back. These flapped about like the wings of a scurrying chicken whenever the cat moved. The animal was able to lift up its wings.
April 5, Thursday: For most years we don’t have any record, but early in 1901 someone at the Chicago Tribune made up a list of the lynchings which had occurred in America during the previous year. The list had 117 entries — a lynching, typically a white mob of some size hanging an adult black male, had been occurring every three days or so. Because of this list we know that on this day in Southampton County, Virginia, a black man whose name is not of record, accused of having committed arson, was lynched.

The St. Helena Guardian advised that:

In a few days the troopship Milwaukee escorted by the HMS Niobe will arrive with prisoners of war. No unauthorized person will be allowed on the Wharf at the time of disembarkation. The Police will assist, as far as they can, the Military acting under the orders of the Officer Commanding the Troops in keeping order. His Excellency the Governor expresses the hope that the Inhabitants will treat the prisoners with that courtesy and consideration which should be extended to all men who have fought bravely in what they have considered the cause of their Country and will help in repressing any unseemly demonstration which individuals might exhibit.

April 10, Tuesday: Yet again St. Helena became an island prison, as the ship bearing the 1st contingent of some 6,000 South African Boer prisoners came to anchor. Their principal encampment would be out on Deadwood Plain. A (temporary) wave of economic improvement would begin as the island’s human population arrived at an all-time record of 9,850.

We doubt if the Island has ever been seen in such a state of suppressed excitement. All common necessaries of life have been immediately raised in price and horseflesh, owing to the sharp practices of Island owners, has advanced considerably in value. Milk, butter, vegetables etc., are all going up in price, the prevalent idea being of course to sell quantities to the highest bidder without increasing the supply.

April 13, Friday: The initial contingent of Boer prisoners of war lined up and filed off the boat at James Bay, St. Helena. Welcome to your new home.

They were marched inside a line of guards via Napoleon Street to the Camp. The line extended some hundreds of yards, and with the crowds of spectators who lined the streets on either side, presented a sight never witnessed in St. Helena by any of the present
generation, and one not quickly to be forgotten — a motley crowd of beings of all ages, from boys of 14 to men of 60, some clean and decently clad, others poorly clad, dirty and unkempt, and sickly-looking, each with a dirty haversack, water kettle or bottle, or string of drinking pots and pans, some with bundles of clothing wrapped in blankets.

May: On St. Helena an epidemic of influenza produced 75 deaths.

October: The little family of Robert Frost and Elinor Miriam White Frost relocated to a farm near Derry, New Hampshire.

    Boer prisoners of war helped construct on their island prison of St. Helena a new road to West Rocks.
    Thank you, guys:
    Roses are red, violets are blue,
    Infrastructure is nice, and so are you.

November: The Boers staged a craft exhibition at their Deadwood POW Camp on the island prison of St. Helena. Damn we’re good.

December: On the island prison of St. Helena, the initial issue of a Boer newspaper Kamp Kruimels.
February: 5 Boers attempt an escape from St. Helena by clambering into a fishing boat at Sandy Bay. Tearing up floorboards, they attempted unsuccessfully to paddle away, while pleading with the fishermen to sell them the oars. Eventually (fortunately for these adventurous ones) a camp guard arrived and escorted them back to their POW encampment.

April: Boer prisoners of war put up a new crane on the St. James, St. Helena wharf.

Bubonic plague in South Africa necessitated extra quarantine regulations for St. Helena.

June: A water-condensation plant started up in Rupert’s Bay, St. Helena:

Water, water everywhere,
I think I need a drink.

December 25, Wednesday: A young Boer, Andries Smorenburg, had fashioned a crate for himself that he had carefully marked “Curios Only,” “With Care,” and “This Side Up,” and had shipped himself away from the prison island of St. Helena aboard the northbound Union Castle Mail Ship SS Goth. His crate was addressed to Stroud, Gloucestershire and packed with clothing, matches, and enough food and water to last 20 days. The crate got tossed about, however, and Smorenburg received a concussion and lost most of his water. After five miserable days at sea the prisoner was discovered on Christmas Day by Captain John Attwood (“Boo!” “Merry Christmas to you!”), and would be disembarked on Ascension Island for processing back to his POW encampment.
February 25, Tuesday: General Ben Viljoen arrived at St. Helena on the Britannica along with 38 other Boer officers.

June 17, Tuesday: Nearly 5,000 Boer prisoners of war on St. Helena began repatriation, a few at a time, by becoming willing to swear an oath of allegiance to the British Crown. The repatriation process would continue for 12 months.

July: The cable station at The Briars on St. Helena was completed.

“THE BRIARS” OF ST. HELENA
November: The “Alarm House” atop the hill at Prosperous Bay had been originally created in about 1770 to discharge an alarm gun upon viewing a sail on the horizon. The gun had been replaced by a telegraph system using flags, and then these flags had been replaced by an electric telegraph connected to Longwood by 6 kilometers of wire and poles in 1866, and then the telegraph had been replaced in 1887 by a telephone. At St. Helena’s Prosperous Bay Signal Station, during this month visitors discovered the body of signalman Robert Samuel Gunnell at the door, with a bullet hole in the head.
February 2, Thursday morning: At 7:30AM, Louis Crowie and Richard Crowie were hanged in the Customs back shed for having murdered signalman Robert Samuel Gunnell at St. Helena’s Prosperous Bay Signal Station during the previous November. Quicklime was placed in the coffins with these bodies (these would turn out to be the final executions on this island).
October: After 120 soldiers had boarded the Cluny Castle, St. Helena’s barracks were for the 1st time empty.

A monument was dedicated near South Kensington, Rhode Island, in memory of the Great Swamp Fight of December 19, 1675. They put the monument where they conjectured the fight to have occurred, although archaeological digs in the area have turned up nothing but layer after layer of pristine soil and sand. On the face of the monument they inscribed the suggestion that here **THE NARRAGANSETT INDIES MADE THEIR LAST STAND**—forlorn last stands being romantic and all that—although actually the fight was inconclusive and anyway marked the beginning of English conflict with the Narragansett rather than the end of it (until this attack, the Narragansett had been neutral in regard to the fight of the English against the Wampanoag, but, Metacom’s people having just been resoundingly defeated and scattered, the English at this point were determinedly expanding the conflict).

“**The Great Swamp Fight ensured that the roused Narragansett would now prosecute the war against the English with great vengeance.**”

— Eric B. Schultz, page 267

“**KING PHILLIP'S WAR**”
On the Isle of Jersey, the British crown handed over Mont Orgueil Castle to the States.

The flax industry on St. Helena, moribund, was re-invigorated by the government, and lace making also was reintroduced — experts from elsewhere would assist the locals to get up to speed. A private investor would fund another attempt to garner a harvest from the sea but mackerel would not appear and his canning factory would remain silent.

May: 183 St. Helenians emigrated to work in the mines of Namaqualand.

June 11, Tuesday: A £1/year/person tax had been exacted by the British government in South Africa, as a way to force the Zulus into a wage economy. At the end of the Zulu Poll Tax revolt against this some 3,000-4,000 natives were dead and some 7,000 imprisoned, and some 4,000 were flogged. When there was an outbreak of beri-beri on Mauritius, Governor Lieutenant-Colonel Sir Henry Lionel Gallway of St. Helena agreed to accept 25 of the more prominent prisoners, such as Tilonko, Messeni, Ndhlove a son of Sigananda, and others believed by the Government of Natal to have been ringleaders. On this day they arrived aboard the steamship Inyati, seemingly half-starved and sickly. Some bore an “L” on their clothing, indicating a life sentence. The government would issue one blanket per person and house them at the barracks on Ladder Hill, using them to break rocks in local quarries. There was no particular inclination to be good to such men:

12 ounces of mealy meal for breakfast and 12 for supper, and 18 ounces of the same food for dinner with salt, and during the week some vegetables and 11lb of fresh beef per man per week will be issued. To tea, coffee, milk and tobacco they will be strangers.
December: Professor William James worked on the Oxford lectures and attempted to explicate Pontius Pilate for the benefit of the American Philosophical Association meeting at Cornell University, in an address “The Meaning of the Word Truth.”

A government flax mill began operation at Longwood on St. Helena.

June: Charles Edward Ives and Harmony Twichell were married.

St. Helena’s craftwork was placed on exhibit at London’s Caxton Hall.

July: In Venice Ezra Pound published his initial collection of poems, A LUME SPENTO (WITH TAPERS QUENCHED).

The St. Helena government took over the Lace Making Association, establishing a government Lace School.
February: Alfred Moseley established a fish-curing business on St. Helena (there would turn out to be not so many fish to cure).

May: The Eastern Telegraph Company transferred its cable repair vessels to St. Helena.
When the SS *Papanui* arrived in James Bay with a load of emigrants from England heading toward Australia, it was on fire. It burned out and sank, but not before it was possible to rescue its 364 passengers and crew. They were cared for on *St. Helena*.

April: In 1881 the census had shown Jamestown to have a population of 2,249. At this point the census showed a decline to 1,416. In some country areas of *St. Helena* populations had increased, but overall there were fewer people living on the island.
July: Inauguration of the Boys Scouts at Plantation House on St. Helena.

August: Harriet Monroe of Chicago asked Ezra Pound to contribute to the new magazine Poetry.

Due to an outbreak of scarlet fever the schools of St. Helena would close, for nearly three months.
June: A suggestion was publicized that the suffragettes of the United Kingdom, convicted of misdemeanors, suffer confinement on St. Helena.

July: Saul Solomon opened a flax mill at Bamboo Hedge on St. Helena.

August: The St. Helena Association was started in Cape Town.

September: Ezra Pound met Mary Fenollosa.

The St. Helena government paid one old pence per rat tail for 4,800 tails (Cecil Isaac of Plantation singlehandedly collected 414 of these tails).
World War I broke out in the Balkans, pitting Britain, France, Italy, Russia, Serbia, the USA, and Japan against Austria, Germany, and Turkey, because Serbians had killed the heir to the Austrian throne in Bosnia. Austria declared war on Serbia, joining the hostilities that had been going on in the Balkans for two years. Shortly Bulgaria, Portugal, and Romania also joined the fray.

Mobilisation of the militia of the Isle of Jersey, for home defence.

The defunct St. Helena Volunteer Corps was re-established, and the island’s flax industry flourished.


February: The German super-dreadnoughts Kaiser, Koenig Albert, and Strasbourg visited St. Helena where the 2,400 members of their crews posted some 5,000 postcards. You gotta love those Germans.

March: Margaret Sanger prepared the initial issue of The Woman Rebel, a radical feminist monthly that advocated militant feminism (including the practice of birth control). For this reason three issues would be banned and in August she would be indicted for the violation of postal obscenity laws. Unwilling to risk a lengthy stay in a federal prison, in October she would jump bail and as “Bertha Watson” embark for England. En route she would instruct friends to release 100,000 copies of “Family Limitation,” a 16-page pamphlet providing explicit instructions on the use of a variety of contraceptive methods such as suppositories and douches.

Work began again on reconstruction of the St. Helena wharf (in the following year the wharf would be enlarged).

July: St. Helena’s schools were closed for 5 months due to whooping cough.

August: When Great Britain declared war on Germany 165 “Saints” enlisted in a Volunteer Corps.

Thorpe’s Bioscope opened at Rickmers.
October: With Italy about to enter World War I, the Socialist Party opposed interventionism and some revolutionary syndicalists broke away into a splinter group they called Fasci d'azione rivoluzionaria internazionalista. Benito Mussolini joined the Milan fascio, plumping for Italy to abandon the Triple Alliance, and its relations with Imperial Germany and the Austro-Hungarian Empire, in order to enter the world war on the side of Britain and France (this is what, in the following year, would indeed happen).

Ezra Pound sent T.S. Eliot’s “The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock” to Poetry (this would appear in the issue for June 1915). He began to incorporate Ernest Fenollosa’s translations of Chinese poetry and Japanese Noh plays into poems of his own (such as “The River Merchant’s Wife”).

A refortified St. Helena was reinforced with 87 further British soldiers and Governor Major Sir Harry Edward Spiller Cordeaux imposed martial law (which would be continuous, in this “outpost of empire,” until 1918).
November: Ezra Pound’s “Near Perigord.”

18 crewmen of the Indian Monarch arrived at St. Helena in a rowboat (their ship had gone under 420 miles to the south-southeast).
August: Harry S Truman was sworn into regular army service as a member of the 129th Field Artillery regiment. Give ’em hell, Harry.

The Sultan of Zanzibar, Sayyid Khalid bin Barghash al Said, described for the record as “Pretender to the Sultanate of Zanzibar,” arrived on St. Helena with a party of 25 mostly consisting of harem members. They would be prisoners, so to speak, in Jamestown at Pilling School on the Military Parade Ground. There would be virtually zero interaction with these folks during the entire sojourn, until in 1921 they would be relocated to the Seychelles Islands (except that some islanders would preserve mental images of beautiful women covered in flowing silk robes).

October: After the St. Helena Guardian got censored, its editor Benjamin Grant stopped the press for the duration. What’s the point?

December: 175 men and 42 women were earning a living in the St. Helena flax industry.
To Senator Warren G. Harding belongs the credit for 1st use of the alliteration “Founding Fathers.”

A giant tortoise from Mauritius in the Indian Ocean had died on St. Helena in 1877, the carapace of which remains to be viewed in the Natural History Museum in London. At this point another of these giant tortoises died in tumbling over a cliff, because it broke its shell.

July: Public health officials in Philadelphia issued a bulletin about the “Spanish influenza.”

Solomon, Thorpe and another island family business name, Deason, held a public meeting at Rickmers urging the UK government to recall St. Helena Acting Governor Dixon.
Here’s a belated explanation for our Manifest Destiny as a nation: “Nothing should appeal so strongly as the Empire to democracy, for it is the greatest engine of democracy the world has ever known…. It has infected the whole world with liberty and democracy.”

Motor transport was prohibited on the island of St. Helena.

February: Former Crown Prosecutor and Magistrate James Homagee, who had managed the St. Helena Savings Bank for 50 years, was sentenced to 5 years imprisonment for embezzling £4,829.

A court martial to address war crimes was convened in Constantinople.

July: Peace celebrations were held on Francis Plain of St. Helena to mark the end of World War I.

The Constantinople branch of the Ittihad Party planned to send Javid, Dr. Adnan, and his wife Halide Hanum as their delegates to the Congress convened in Sivas by Mustafa Kemal (Atatürk). To escape trial for war crimes, Javid had for the eight months following the Armistice been in hiding in Turkey.

131. Sir C.P. Lucas, United Empire, 1919.
June: A lace depot was opened by Solomon’s in Main Street of Jamestown, St. Helena.
The 1st St. Helenians left to work on Ascension island.

Emergency Restriction Act for US immigration.

National Academy of Sciences, Psychological Examining in the United States Army.

May: The former Sultan of Zanzibar, with his harem, was taken away from St. Helena as prisoners on the Cawdor Castle bound for the Seychelles Islands (in 1925 they would be released and allowed to settle in Tanganyka and later in Kenya).

June: Cotton was planted on Prosperous Bay Plain in St. Helena.
W.J. Robbins initiated plant tissue culture studies.

Knudson published his asymbiotic method of seed germination; “Nonsymbiotic Germination of Orchid Seeds” in *Botanical Gazette*. This would revolutionize the propagation of orchids, both sexually and vegetatively, and lead to techniques of mericloning and meristemming that are used widely today for production of many crop species.

From this point into 1924, Guy Brunton and Flinders Petrie would be discovering caches of fossil bones, in shrines and tombs dating to the 13th Century BCE at Qau and Matmar, devoted to the Egyptian deity Set.

Roy Chapman Andrews of the American Museum of Natural History began a series of excavations in central Mongolia, hoping to find human fossils (they found, instead, dinosaur fossils).
This photograph, allegedly of a giant tortoise who had been introduced to, or met, or at least sighted, Napoléon on St. Helena, appeared in Volume 22 of NATURAL HISTORY, a publication of the American Museum of Natural History. No provenance or justification whatever for the caption was provided by that scholarly source.

Here, with poetic license, is a poem by Michael McNeilley, © 1997, riffing yet further upon this urban legend:

**The turtle who looked at Napoleon**

Exiled to Saint Helena
in the South Atlantic, in 1815 Napoleon turned
to gardening, turning the soil with the
simple implements at hand, spacing the tiny seeds
in straight long rows with military precision.

Napoleon's jailer, Sir Hudson Lowe found
himself as bothered by rows of the Corsican Guard disguised
as radishes, ranked across the earth outside
his office window, as by Napoleon's contentment.
In a singular act of creative malevolence,

Lowe sent off to the Galapagos
for two giant land turtles.
The frigate bearing them arrived,
Lowe named the turtles Jonathan and Josephine
and set them loose in the garden of Napoleon.
Bulldozers by nature, 
the giant tortoises nosed up and 
swallowed down the radishes, tomatoes, 
turnips, carrots and onions, smearing 
Napoleon's careful rows into the dust.

Over morning coffee, through office window bars 
Sir Hudson sat smiling at Napoleon's eaten and 
uprooted, flattened garden. 
One day as he watched, Napoleon himself 
rrounded the corner, moving slowly, contemplating the sea.

Dressed in gardener's tunic, head towel-draped 
against the heat of the South Atlantic sun, 
Napoleon bumped along, crouched on the back of 
Jonathan, eyes straining past the breakers, as if 
to spot Nelson's flagship.

Lowe watched, somewhat dismayed 
as Napoleon surveyed 
the sea from his rolling helm, 
scinting into the noon sun for the 
mirage of his emancipation.

But Napoleon died in 1821, his power drained, 
unable to adapt to turtle life: 
powerless to attain contentment 
in slow uncoverings, green vegetation 
and long waiting.

Wild goats pulled up the grass of the Galapagos, 
and the big land turtles suffered starvation, their 
ancient ranks further thinned by sailors 
who found them excellent for soup and shell. 
But fine grass grew on the grave of Napoleon, and 
on the grave of Jonathan's mate, who died soon after 
of some turtle disease. 
A turtle grieves long, 
but Saint Helena offers 
food and good weather,

and Jonathan remains there today, lifting his old head 
among the flies, "Bonaparte," still barely legible, 
carved low near the rim of his giant shell. 
Jonathan opens a red-rimmed, baleful eye 
to the morning,

an eye that gazed upon Napoleon, 
the eye of a turtle of destiny, who thought 
no more of the little man long ago riding 
than he thinks of today's flies. 
But Jonathan still 
considers the radishes, as they 
arrive each day at sunset, 
compliments of the British government, 
a longtime legacy of Sir Hudson Lowe, 
and Jonathan is often content.

In 1840 Napoleon's remains 
were shipped to Paris; In the compound in Saint Helena 
little of Napoleon but his death mask now remains. 
Not even a tree grows there still, that gave Napoleon shade. 
But Jonathan moves slowly on 
across the volcanic surface,
through what once was a garden, resolute,
his three-chambered heart slowly beating,
eye upon a nearby clump of grass, as green
and new as once upon Galapagos.

February: Off St. Helena, the wreck of the Spangeree was smashed in half and sunk by heavy surf.

April: The National Bank of South Africa closed its St. Helena branch.

May: The St. Helena Football League was formed.

Charles Ephraim Burchfield got married with Bertha L. Kenreich of Greenford, Ohio.
October: In the inflation that would persuade many in the German public to accept Nazism, it required 45,000 Reichsmarks to obtain $1 US.

40 men left St. Helena to work on Ascension Island (Ascension had in the previous month made a dependency of St. Helena).
June: When electricity was turned on in the St. Helena General Hospital — what a difference it made!

October 15, Saturday: When Dieudonne Costes and Joseph le Brix landed their Breguet 19 at an airstrip in Brazil after having flown nonstop across the South Atlantic from Senegal, there had been, of course, no “Wide Awake Airfield” (so named due to a nearby noisy colony of Sooty Terns) as yet on Ascension Island, because the initial plane to land on that island would not set down its wheels until 1942 due to WWII, and there had been, of course, no corresponding “Too Late For Napoleon” airstrip on which they might have set down at St. Helena, because construction of such an airstrip is as of 2014 completely stalled and hypothetical).
October: Sixty nests of “white ants” (termites) were destroyed in the vicinity of Plantation House, St. Helena.

October 15, Saturday: When Dieudonne Costes and Joseph le Brix landed their Breguet 19 at an airstrip in Brazil after having flown nonstop across the South Atlantic from Senegal, there had been, of course, no “Wide Awake Airfield” (so named due to a nearby noisy colony of Sooty Terns) as yet on Ascension Island, because the initial plane to land on that island would not set down its wheels until 1942 due to WWII, and there had been, of course, no corresponding “Too Late For Napoleon” airstrip on which they might have set down at St. Helena, because construction of such an airstrip is as of 2014 completely stalled and hypothetical).
April: Bees were re-introduced to St. Helena.

May: Anne Spencer Morrow graduated from Smith College with two literary awards.

Repair began at Plantation House on St. Helena, which “white ants” (termites) had rendered uninhabitable.
June: Because of a money gift from Albert Bender, Robinson Jeffers, Una Call Kuster Jeffers, and their twins Donnan and Garth were able to depart for a 4,000-mile 6-month tour of Ireland, and then on to Scotland, and to England. Jeffers would just miss meeting Yeats. They would visit the George Moore estate of Virginia Woolf. In the Lake District of England, they would visit the Bronte Home and the Wordsworth cottage. They would visit Stonehenge and Iverness. During this period the poet would receive $500 for his CAWDOR manuscript. Horace Liveright published his DEAR JUDAS AND OTHER POEMS. He wrote his Noh play and the narrative of “The Loving Shepherdess.” Louis Adamics put out a chapbook titled ROBINSON JEFFERS: A PORTRAIT.

A “St. Helena Executive Council” was formed, having the Senior Military Officer and Government Secretary as ex-officio members, by Order in Council.

November: Mr. Withecombe brought an Austen Seven to St. Helena, its initial automobile.

The City of New York made itself the initial American cruise liner to drop anchor off St. Helena, where “aloha” does not mean either hello or goodbye.

March: Four beehives were imported to St. Helena.

April: Saplings were planted by schoolchildren at Casons on St. Helena (these would of course promptly be consumed by appreciative goats, but at least the goats didn’t eat the schoolchildren).
May: The Run burst its banks, and there was widespread flooding on St. Helena.

July: St. Helena’s flax mills closed due to the low price of hemp (they would reopen during November).

October 13, Thursday: Sir Stewart Spencer Davis, who would be credited with naming Jonathan the giant tortoise, took over as governor of St. Helena.
April: An attempt was made to create a lobster industry on St. Helena.

Nazi rule compelled Born, Courant, Franck, and many other scientists to leave the universities of Germany.

“Our prayer is: Lord God, let us never hesitate, let us never play the coward, let us never forget the duty which we have taken upon us.”

— Adolf Hitler, March 1933

October: On St. Helena, Governor Sir Stewart Spencer Davis was instrumental in setting up a cricket club.

As Leo Szilard later would recollect, “It occurred to me in October 1933 that a chain reaction might be set up if an element could be found that would emit two neutrons when it swallowed one neutron.” This idea would become a classified British patent in 1935, even before such actual fission was first observed.

In Germany, Chancellor Adolf Hitler of the Nazi Party, raised as a Catholic, declared that “We have made an end of denials of the Deity and the crying down of religion.”
July: The initial meeting of a St. Helena Growers Association.

October: The initial flight passing above St. Helena, a seaplane of HMS Dorsetshire (as yet no airplane has taken off from or landed upon this particular spot of land in the midst of the waters).

The New York pyramid schemer Charles Ponzi was deported to Italy rather than St. Helena.
October 25, Monday: Sir Stewart Spencer Davis, who has been credited with naming Jonathan the giant tortoise, and who had been instrumental in setting up a cricket club on St. Helena, left the office of governor.
October 29, Saturday: The following piece of newspaper truth appeared on page 21 of the *Sydney Morning Herald* (New South Wales, Australia, published between 1842 and 1954):

**NAPOLEON'S PET TORTOISE STILL ALIVE.**

On the tiny Island of St. Helena, in the South Atlantic, where Napoleon died in exile, there is a tortoise that enjoys the distinction of being the only known creature now alive to have seen the famous man in the flesh.

The tortoise was taken to St. Helena from the little island of Aldabra situated in the Indian Ocean on the other side of Africa, before the “Little Corporal” began his exile. How old it was then is not known.

Venerable as Napoleon’s pet must be it probably is much younger than another historical tortoise now living on the Island of Mauritius. This reptile became a national possession and in 1810 it was specifically mentioned in the treaty by which the French ceded Mauritius to England. For seventy years before that, it was said to have lived on the island. If that figure is correct, the tortoise would now be about 200 years old.

—C.G.C.C.
May: Formation of the St. Helena Home Guard.

July: On St. Helena, the Friendly Societies Union met for the initial time. The Union had two representatives on the new Advisory Council.

Colonel George Smith Patton, Jr., an excellent swordsman, was promoted to Brigadier General and assumed command of the 2d Brigade, 2d Armored Division stationed at Fort Benning, Georgia (I have it on good authority that it didn’t occur to anyone at the time that what we needed to do was deport this guy to St. Helena.)

---

**Skilled Swordsmen**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Saint Ignatius Loyola</th>
<th>President Harry S Truman</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Michel Angelo</td>
<td>General George Patton</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sir Walter Raleigh</td>
<td>Heinrich Himmler</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>René Descartes</td>
<td>Hermann Göring</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Milton</td>
<td>Juan Péron</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George Frederick Handel</td>
<td>Francisco Franco</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johann Wolfgang von Goethe</td>
<td>Benito Mussolini</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Karl Marx</td>
<td>Oswald Mosley</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sir Richard Burton</td>
<td>Reinhard Heydrich</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Skilled Swordsmen

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Aleksandr Pushkin</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
August: St. Helenians lost 20 minutes when they reset their clocks to Greenwich Mean Time.132

August 4, Monday: Royal Fleet Auxiliary ship HMS Darkdale, a new oil tanker, arrived at St. Helena Island to be Fleet Oiler there, loaded with 3,000 tons of fuel oil, 850 tons of aviation spirit, 500 tons of diesel oil, and some lubricating oil. Prior to coming to anchor it caused slight damage to a Norwegian tanker M.V. Nyholm.

Japan ended all steamship traffic with the United States.

Josef Jakobs, a German who had been found injured in the English countryside wearing civilian clothing underneath a flying suit, was taken before a court-martial at the Duke of York Headquarters in Chelsea, charged with “Committing treachery in that you at Ramsay in Huntingdonshire on the night of 31 January 1941/1 February 1941 descended by parachute with intent to help the enemy.” The inquiry took two days. He asked whether he would be shot or hanged if found guilty, and was informed that since this was a military rather than a civilian court, he would be shot. He admitted to being an officer in the Intelligence Section of the German General Staff. He was found guilty and sentenced to execution by firing squad. He would petition the King, alleging that he was a friend of England who had come to this county to help her in her fight against Germany. He asked to be held until the end of the war, when he would be able to prove his innocence of the charge. This would get him exactly nowhere, of course.

132. The island’s timekeeping had historically been based of course on “local noon” readings taken with a sextant, and had thus been 20 minutes earlier than GMT. To determine “local noon” with a sextant, you did not need to know your exact latitude or longitude, or even what day of the year it was, and you did not need to have access to a precise timepiece. The sun being at its highest point when it crosses the local meridian, it is said to be “in meridian passage” with the time being “local noon.” You started making your readings when you estimated that it was probably about half an hour before local noon and you followed the sun up with a series of sextant sights, writing down the exact timepiece reading for the initial sight. You took an altitude sight every three minutes or so, until you observed that the sun’s altitude was no longer increasing (during meridian passage the sun seems to “hang” for a short period in the same position). Shortly afterward, you set your sextant at the same altitude as your initial sight and waited for the sun to drop to this altitude, keeping an eye on your timepiece. You wrote down the timepiece reading. You subtracted your initial time reading from your final time reading, then divided the duration by two: the precise time of local noon was halfway between the times of your initial and final readings. When you had adjusted your timepiece by the number of minutes and seconds that you calculated it to have been “off,” you were good to go for another day of fun and games.
October 22, Wednesday: Tokyo carries out its first practice blackout.

When Royal Fleet Auxiliary ship HMS *Darkdale*, a new oil tanker, was torpedoed with four torpedoes while anchored in position 15.55.03 S 05.42.15 W off Jamestown Harbor, St. Helena by German submarine U68 (Kapitan Karl-Friedrich Merten) in James Bay off Jamestown, it exploded and turned over and sank and the only 2 survivors out of its crew of 43 were Captain Thomas H. Card and Chief Engineer Alexander B. McIntyre, who happened to be ashore. There were only 3 explosions as one German torpedo did not strike or failed to detonate.

Germans in Odessa locked 12,000 Jews into four giant warehouses, and set them afire. Those managing to escape to the roof met machine-gun bullets and hand grenades. The fourth warehouse, the one that had been filled with the men, was destroyed by artillery. In all 25,000 Jews would be killed in Odessa.

Most of the Soviet government, diplomatic corps, and numerous important cultural figures including Dmitri Shostakovich and Aram Khachaturian arrived from Moscow by train in Kuibyshev.
August 15, Saturday: The *Friends* monthly meeting in Manhattan was considering the possibility that it might begin to provide hospitality and services to American service men in “USO” style.

Friend *Bayard Rustin* therefore wrote to his monthly meeting to advise them that:

> The primary social function of a religious society is to “speak the truth to power.” The truth is that war is wrong. It is then our duty to make war impossible first in us and then in society. To cooperate with the government in building morale seems inconsistent with all we profess to believe.... The greatest service that we can render the men in the armed forces is to maintain our peace testimony.

(This phrase that Friend Bayard put within quotation marks in his letter as an attribution from some unspecified source, “speak the truth to power,” actually is from Islamic sources, being a condensation of one of the hadith or “sayings” of *Mohammed*, and would come back to us a dozen years later, in 1954, in declarative form, in the title of a famous Quaker peace pamphlet, *SPEAK TRUTH TO POWER: A QUAKER SEARCH FOR AN ALTERNATIVE TO VIOLENCE*.)

Patrol Wing 11 was commissioned at San Juan, Puerto Rico for operations in Caribbean Sea Frontier. Naval Air Station, Whidbey Island, Washington was established. United State Naval Auxiliary Air Facility, Jamaica, British West Indies, was established. Marine Aircraft Wings, Pacific, was established at San Diego, California.

The *Gloucester Castle*, an 8,006-ton liner of the Union Castle Line, was sunk by the German commerce raider *Michel* some 600 miles northeast of St. Helena. This ship had left Liverpool on its way to Table Bay on June
92 passengers and crewmen died. The 61 survivors retrieved from two lifeboats were transferred to the Michel's supply ship based in Osaka and would became POWs in Japan and be obliged to work in a steel factory and a cement factory. Two of the survivors would die in captivity.
The SS *Baependy*, a Brazilian passenger and cargo ship (4,801 tons) serving as a troop transport, was sunk by Korvette-Kapitän Harro Schacht’s U507 off the mouth of the Real River between Rio de Janeiro and Manaus. There were over 700 troops on board of which 270 died. On the following day this U-boat would likewise sink the *Annibal Benevolo*, another Brazilian passenger ship, with 150 deaths, and the *Araraquara*, with 131 deaths. (The sinking of these passenger ships would cause Brazil to declare war on Germany on August 22nd. U507’s entire crew of 54 would die in the South Atlantic on January 13, 1943 when their U-boat would come under attack with depth charges dropped from a US Catalina flying boat.)

November 6, Friday: The fifth of 18 patriotic fanfares for brass and percussion commissioned by Eugene Goossens and the Cincinnati Symphony Orchestra, A Fanfare for Friends by Daniel Gregory Mason, was performed for the initial time, in Cincinnati.

*German* forces attempted a breakout in the Caucasus but were stopped at Ordzhonikidze.

About 500 miles south of *St. Helena*, the *City of Cairo* was torpedoed in error by Kapitän-Leutnant Karl-Friedrich Merten’s U68, who had supposed this British passenger liner to be a 8,000-ton cargo vessel. About a third of its 300 passengers and crew would die. The *Germans* helped floaters get to the lifeboats. This U-boat commander provided precise instructions as to how to reach *St. Helena* before departing the scene with an apology. One lifeboat, however, would drift for 51 days and 16 of the 18 people on it would have died before arriving at the coast of Brazil. (Some years later the British survivors would hold a reunion in London and would invite Merten, who had published his own account of the sinking. At this reunion a survivor would be heard to remark “We couldn’t have been sunk by a nicer man.” Karl-Friedrich Merten would die of cancer in May 1993.)

United States Transport *Zeilin* (AP-9) was damaged by a *Japanese* dive bomber in the Solomon Islands, at 9 degrees 24 minutes South, 160 degrees 2 minutes East.
“The Hundred Men” left the island of St. Helena for the United Kingdom as agricultural laborers.

Admiral Sir James Eberle GCB notes, on page 198 his LIFE ON THE OCEAN WAVE (Roundtuit Publishing, 2007), that “We returned for tea at Plantation House which was not only the home of the Governor and his family — but also of Jonathan, a giant tortoise (*Testudo Gigantica*)¹³³ who was then reputed to be over a hundred years old. After tea, as we played croquet on the lawn, Jonathan joined in enthusiastically — only, he would place his very large and heavy frame on top of any croquet ball that came his way! In view of his age, and the belief that whilst there was such a tortoise at Plantation House, St Helena would always be British, I was glad to be able to arrange for him to be given a successor, who was in due course delivered to the island by a ship of the Royal Fleet Auxiliary.”

November: Robinson Jeffers declined an invitation to represent the Pacific Coast region in the Academy of American Poets. He was elected to membership in the American Academy of Arts and Letters.

There was an epidemic of polio on St. Helena.

President Harry S Truman kicked off his campaign to create Universal Compulsory Military Training, carefully explaining to anyone who would listen that compulsory training to kill is in an entirely different category from compulsory conscription to kill (in such compulsory training to kill, hopefully, if you do it right you don’t need actually to kill anyone, you see, so how could even a pacifist possibly find anything to argue with here).

¹³³. There has been a lack of scientific agreement as to the Linnaean naming of this species of tortoise. It all sounds very scientific-like, but in fact different papers on the species suggest entirely different Linnean genus and species names, such as *Dipsochelys Hololissa*. In addition, it is possible that there were three different species of giant tortoise in the Seychelles.
August: The British garrison stationed on St. Helena during World War II departed the island — sorry, you’re not an “outpost of empire” anymore, you’re just not, you’re just a spot of dry land that’s all by itself.

The US federal Congress passed the Atomic Energy Act and the FBI acquired “responsibility for determining the loyalty of individuals ... having access to restricted Atomic Energy data” (later, executive orders from Presidents Harry S Truman and Dwight David Eisenhower would make the Bureau responsible to investigate any and all allegations of disloyalty among federal employees).

Tommy is one loyal son-of-a-gun.
April 29, Tuesday: Princesses Elizabeth and Margaret arrived at St. Helena aboard HMS Vanguard, as part of a visit with their parents King George VI and Queen Elizabeth to South Africa.
October: In Niagara Falls, New York, a month after his 2d barrel ride, three creditors persuaded a bailiff to seize all the goods and chattels of William “Red” Hill, Jr. The three falls barrels owned by the Hill family sold at forced public auction for a total of $2,900.

When Aircraft Carriers HMS Theseus and Vengeance together with Destroyers HMS Corunna and Jutland participated in a military exercise involving a mock attack upon St. Helena with 30 naval aircraft (for purposes of the simulation, everyone understood, they were pretending that the island was some other island, someplace worth attacking), this must have been just awesome, at least for the islanders.

December: 200 St. Helenians, mostly women, emigrated to South Africa.134

134. “St. Helenians” is a neologism used in this database. The inhabitants of the island are known among themselves as “Saints.”
May: The foundation stone was laid for the St. Helena and the Cross church.

August: The middle and upper cemeteries in Jamestown, St. Helena were deconsecrated.
July: Charles Ephraim Burchfield was teaching at Ohio University in Athens, Ohio.

Kenneth Walter Cameron’s “Thoreau Discovers Emerson: A College Reading Record” (Bulletin of the New York Public Library LVII, #7:319-34).

The lower cemetery in Jamestown, St. Helena was deconsecrated.
March: Longwood Old House Museum on St. Helena was reopened to the public.
June: On St. Helena, a new General Hospital opened.

December: On St. Helena, Ovenstone’s fish factory opened (during November 1957 it would close).
In 1853 Paul Émile Botta and Victor Place had attempted to move two 30-ton Khorsabad colossi from Mesopotamia (Iraq) to the Louvre in Paris. To ship them they had sawed them into pieces, and then one of them had disappeared into the yellow floods of the Tigris River. At this point a plaster replica was created of the one that had been lost, on the basis of contemporary drawings.

HRH the Duke of Edinburgh visited St. Helena during a round-the-world escapade aboard HMY Britannia. Also, once again the remote island would function as a prison, as 3 Bahraini princes would arrive as prisoners of Britain (they would be released by a writ of habeas corpus during June 1961).
October: A radio telephone link was achieved from St. Helena to Europe via Ascension, connected by Cable & Wireless.

Fire destroyed the core of a reactor at Britain’s Windscale nuclear complex, sending clouds of radioactivity into the atmosphere, and for sure everybody hoped nothing like that would ever happen again.\textsuperscript{135}

The Jet Propulsion Laboratory proposed that we out-Sputnik the Russkis with a lunar program they called “Red Socks,” that would set off an atomic bomb on the surface of the moon, not only to collect samples of lunar rock as meteorites, but also, JPL’s director Pickering was quick to point out, to create “beneficial psychological results.” Shock and awe, folks, shock and awe. Moon dust. Terrorism. Terrorists ‘R Us.

\textsuperscript{135} For many years it would be considered impolite to make reference to this unfortunate affair — it would become the elephant in many a classroom. It was just an accident.
July: The St. Helena General Workers Union was formed.
August: On St. Helena, St. Paul’s Social Centre opened (now Kingshurst Community Centre).

October: On St. Helena, the Jamestown Community Association was formed.
May: The St. Helena Life Boat Life Saving Institution was formed.

From the Cambridge Friends Bulletin: “Albert and Joan Baez plan to move at the end of the summer to Claremont, California where Albert will be teaching physics at the Harvey Mudd college next year.”136
April: J.C.R. Licklider sponsored a series of lectures at the Sloan School of Business Administration of MIT, that would become the book *COMPUTERS AND THE WORLD OF THE FUTURE*.

The Bishop of St. Helena purchased Princes Lodge from HW Solomon.

June: An electricity supply was connected to some St. Helena houses from Half Tree Hollow to White Gate.

The 3 Bahraini princes who had been held on St. Helena at the former searchlight station at Munden's Point were released by a writ of *habeas corpus*, and departed for England.

Kenneth L. Carroll’s “Religious Influences on the Manumission of Slaves in Caroline, Dorchester, and Talbot Counties” (Maryland Historical Magazine 56, pages 176-197).

October: St. Helena’s new Advisory Council had its initial meeting.

In Engel v. Vitale the United States Supreme Court ruled that because the federal Constitution prohibits any law respecting an establishment of religion, public school officials were not to be allowed to compose and administer public prayers — regardless of whether the prayers they composed and administered were as they asserted “denominationally neutral” and regardless of whether they made it their practice to allow dissenting pupils to remain silent or be excused while such a prayer was being recited. The public prayer which had been being required of the students, in this case, had been:

Almighty God, we acknowledge our dependence upon Thee, and we beg Thy blessings upon us, our parents, our teachers and our Country.
August: On St. Helena, the practice of “begging” by children on ship days was banned.
May: On St. Helena, the 1st ever registration of electors.

In South Vietnam, after being told they would not be allowed to display any of their religious flags in celebration of Buddha’s birthday, Buddhists rioted. In Hue, the police and soldiers shot at Buddhist demonstrators, killing a woman and eight children. A leading Buddhist accused US officials in Saigon of being “responsible for the present trouble — because you back Diem and his government of ignoramuses.” Political pressure on the Kennedy administration would be mounting, to disassociate itself from President Ngo Dinh Diem’s repressive, family-run puppet government.
March: In the magazine *Pacific Islands Monthly* (Volume 35, page 115), under the rubric “Pleasant Legends,” it was written that “Captain Cook is credited with having brought the tortoise Jonathan to St. Helena [in 1775 aboard the *Resolution*], but in three years residence here, I have never heard of any connection between the two.”

The US was supporting bombing raids against the Ho Chi Minh trail inside Laos, but this was being done by mercenaries flying old American fighter planes, with the US backing for this held as some sort of deep dark secret that only we and the enemy were supposed to know about.
DuPont researcher Stephanie Kwolek created a polyaramid fiber that would be named Kevlar. It would be first used to make steel-belted radial tires. In 1971, a version called Kevlar-29 would be found to be bullet-resistant. This would lead to the introduction of bullet-resistant soft body armor in 1974. In December 1975, an off-duty Seattle WA police officer named Ray Johnson would survive a point-blank shooting because of Kevlar body armor. In 1982, the United States Army would begin replacing its steel helmets and nylon ballistic vests with helmets and vests made from Kevlar.

When the British Post Office decided that henceforward it would employ synthetic fibres to tie its mail bags, this meant the flax mills of St. Helena would need to close.
October: St. Helena Broadcasting completed its test transmissions and, between 5PM and 6PM, broadcast a program it called “Variety Hour.”

December 25, Monday: Governor Sir John Osbaldiston Field presided over the formal opening of “Radio St. Helena.”

A Danish leader, Knud Weiking, had been alleging that someone named Orthon had been in communication with him, and had conveyed the information that there was to be a nuclear war by this Christmas the result of which would be a severe disturbance in the Earth’s orbit. (He and his followers had, warned of the coming catastrophe, prepared a survival bunker.)
August: Delacorte/Seymour Lawrence put out a collection of Kurt Vonnegut, Jr.’s previously published short fiction, as WELCOME TO THE MONKEY HOUSE. His CAT’S CRadle was translated into Japanese by Itô Norio and published by Hayakawa Shobô as NEKO NO YURIKAGO.

On St. Helena, Thornton and Metelercamp, trading as SATIC, purchased the majority of shares in Solomon’s.

October: Operation Sealord, the largest combined naval operation of the entire war in Southeast Asia, began with more than 1,200 gunboats and warships of the US Navy and the South Vietnamese Navy targeting the supply lines of the North Vietnamese Army extending from Cambodia into the Mekong Delta. Enemy supply camps in the Delta and along other waterways would also be successfully disrupted during this operation, which would last two years.

The St. Helena General Workers Union protested against Solomon’s shares being sold to foreigners.
October: When Basil George returned to the island of St. Helena, this wasn’t small change: he was the initial “Saint” to have studied abroad, and graduated from a university!
May 1, Saturday: The short articles at the front of The New Yorker are typically unsigned. This week’s issue (Volume 47, Part 2, Page 31) offered to inform us about a rascally idea Sir Hudson Lowe, Governor of St. Helena, had, to bring a pair of giant tortoises from the Aldabra Islands to irritate the captive emperor Napoléon, by destroying his carefully tended garden: “The tortoise is nature’s bulldozer, and soon there wasn’t much left of that lovely French garden. One of those tortoises met an accidental death some years ago — a truck pushed it into an abyss. The other tortoise, whose name is Jonathan, is still vibrantly alive. Last year was the bicentenary of Napoleon’s birth, and a group of French writers went to St. Helena. I tried to talk them into paying my way there, claiming I could talk to Jonathan in chelonian — tortoise language. Just think — Jonathan is the only living creature to have seen Napoleon. I didn’t get to go to St. Helena, but the late French poet Jean Follain, who was a friend of mine, sent me some fine photos of Jonathan last fall.”

June 11, Friday: On page 40 of LIFE Magazine an advertisement by the makers of the “Canadian Club” brand of cheap blended whiskey advised us to “Be sure to visit Plantation House, built for officials of the East India Company. Don’t miss the only living witness of Napoleon’s imprisonment on the island [St. Helena]: a land tortoise that’s over 195 years old.”
April: Cyril Young and Leonard Hayes, who had rescued a girl at the wharf of St. Helena, received Royal Humane Society certificates.
May: Senator Ervin began three months of televised Watergate hearings which reported enemies’ lists, money drops, illegally obtained campaign funds, and harassment by the IRS of political enemies. Most importantly, it was revealed that the Oval Office had a secret tape-recording system.

St. Helena had severe drought.

Kurt Vonnegut, Jr.’s Breakfast of Champions was published by Delacorte/Seymour Lawrence. While this effort was wildly successful as a commercial release, it must be admitted that critical reviewers were, by and large, underwhelmed. The author was, however, awarded an honorary LHD by Indiana University, and succeeded Anthony Burgess as Distinguished Professor of English Prose at City University of New York.
June: Eric O’Dean and Ivan Henry were swept from rocks at Deep Valley, St. Helena.

News items relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:

• MOS Technology announced the MC6501 at US$20 and the MC6502 at US$25. At this point, the Intel 8080 was selling for about US$150.
• Bob Marsh delivered the 1st Processor Technology 4KB memory boards for the Altair PC.
• The Southern California Computer Society was formed.
• The National Computer Conference was held in Anaheim, California.
• Paul Terrell signed a deal with MITS by which he was to receive a 5% commission on every Altair sold in Northern California.
June: A team of divers came to St. Helena to attempt to salvage a 17th-Century Dutch merchantman, the Witte Leeuw.

News items relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:

• The Western Digital MCP-1600 3-chip CPU appeared.
• The Texas Instruments TMS 9900, one of the 1st true 16-bit microprocessors, appeared.
• The Midwest Area Computer Club conference was held.
• Processor Technology unveiled the Sol-20 to the public at PC ’76 at the Shelbourne Hotel in Atlantic City. It was sold in kit form, using the intel 8080 CPU.
July: St. Helena’s fishing limit was extended to 200 miles.

A news item relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:
  • Microsoft shipped “Microsoft FORTRAN” for CP/M-based computers.

August: Governor Geoffrey Colin Guy set up a St. Helena Shipping Company to own the initial RMS St. Helena, that had been a coastal passenger and cargo vessel motoring back and forth between Vancouver and Alaska. Curnow Shipping Ltd. was chosen to manage this service.

A news item relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:
  • Radio Shack (a division of Tandy Corp.) announced the TRS-80 microcomputer, with Z80 CPU, 4KB RAM, 4KB ROM, keyboard, black-and-white video display, and tape cassette for US$600.

“If you wish to make an apple pie from scratch, you must first invent the universe.”
— Carl Sagan
April: Governor Geoffrey Colin Guy met with the St. Helena Preservation Action Committee to discuss ways of establishing a heritage trust (the Broadway House museum would the following year).

News items relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:

- Microsoft 8080 BASIC won the ICP Million Dollar Award, the initial microprocessor product to do so.
- Taito 1st showed the Space Invaders game, in Japan.

December: Formation of a St. Helena Fisheries Corporation.

The small pox was declared officially to have been eradicated as a threat to public health. It is only in our laboratories now, and with our bio-war experts — so what could possibly go wrong?
During the decade of the 1980s, the organization “Witness for Peace” would be sending thousands of Americans to Nicaragua as a “shield of Love,” to help stop violence by US-backed Contras. 80,000 US citizens would sign a “pledge of Resistance” promising to deploy the tactics of civil disobedience at home if there should be an invasion by US forces.

The Irish Republican Army campaigned in Northern Ireland. Hunger strikes began in Maze prison.

Rediscovery of an endemic flowering shrub, the St. Helena Ebony, believed for over a century to be extinct.

Opening of St. Helena’s Broadway House museum.

In accordance with a St. Helena tradition of never housing local prisoners locally, two islanders convicted of murder and manslaughter were dispatched to Britain to serve out their prison sentences.

March: It was decided that the spire on St. James Church on St. Helena was unsafe and needed to be demolished.

News items relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:

- Atari ad: “Atari promises to be the most popular Personal Computer System of the 1980s!”
- Microsoft Corp. announced its 1st hardware product, the Z-80 SoftCard for the Apple II. This card gave the Apple II CP/M capability, contributing greatly to Apple Computer’s success. The card included CP/M and Microsoft’s Disk BASIC, all for US$349. The announcement was made at the West Coast Computer Faire in San Francisco. Tim Patterson of Seattle Computer Products had built several prototypes before Microsoft’s Don Burdis took over the project. In its 1st year of release, 25,000 units were sold.
- Satellite Software International shipped WordPerfect 1.0 for Data General minicomputers.
- At the West Coast Computer Faire, Adam Osborne approaches Les Felsenstein with the idea of starting a computer company.

“If you wish to make an apple pie from scratch, you must first invent the universe.”

— Carl Sagan
March: An expert arrived on St. Helena to microfilm the archived civil records (in 1989 the island’s parish registers would be microfilmed).

National Geographic offered a photo article (Vol. 159, No. 3) “In the tracks of Thoreau,” by William Howarth, photos by Farrell Grehan.
May: Construction of Charleston Place, a hotel-shopping-convention center, set off a downtown building and rehabilitation boom.

The RMS St. Helena was requisitioned by the Ministry of Defence for use by the British Task Force in the Falklands Conflict, and sailed south with the entire crew volunteering for duty.

August: The RMS St. Helena returned to St. Helena from the Falklands Conflict.
May: The 1st carnival to be held on St. Helena.

Enola Gay Tibbets died at the age of 72 in Delray Beach, Florida.

She was Enola Gay Haggard before she married my dad, and my dad never supported me with the flying — he hated airplanes and motorcycles. When I told them I was going to leave college and go fly planes in the army air corps, my dad said, “Well, I’ve sent you through school, bought you automobiles, given you money to run around with the girls, but from here on, you’re on your own. If you want to go kill yourself, go ahead, I don’t give a damn.” Then Mom just quietly said, “Paul, if you want to go fly airplanes, you’re going to be all right.” And that was that.

A radio interviewer asked the son Paul Warfield Tibbets, Jr. how his mother felt when she learned that her name was painted on the fuselage of the B-29 that had dropped the atom bomb on Hiroshima:

Well, I can only tell you what my dad said. My mother never changed her expression very much about anything, whether it was serious or light, but when she’d get tickled, her stomach would
jiggle. My dad said to me that when the telephone in Miami rang, my mother was quiet first. Then, when it was announced on the radio, he said: “You should have seen the old gal’s belly jiggle on that one.”

July: An abandoned baby girl was noticed in The Run on St. Helena (the same day, she died).

President Reagan signed an appropriations bill to complete the Tenn-Tom Waterway.
April: Prince Andrew, one of the sons of Queen Elizabeth II, visited St. Helena. He was escorted on a tour of the island by the outgoing governor, John Dudley Massingham, and a good time was had by all. The governor announced a plan to build a Prince Andrew School.

July: UK coins ceased to be legal tender on the island of St. Helena.

News items relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:

• Jack Tramiel, former President of Commodore International, bought a controlling interest in the Atari home computer and video game divisions from Warner Communications, for US$240 million. Warner retains Atari’s coin-operated game division and home communications venture Ataritel.
• Six months after its introduction, 100,000 Macintosh computers had been sold.
• Digital Vision released the Computer Eyes video capture system for the Apple II, selling for US$130 (US$350 with a camera).
April: 28 St. Helenians departed to work in the Falkland Islands. This group was the 1st, but many more were to follow.

News items relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:

- IBM announced the IBM PC Convertible, 80C88-based, 256K RAM, with two 720K floppy disks, for US$2,000.
- IBM discontinued the IBM Portable PC.
- Satellite Software International shipped Student WordPerfect for US$75.
- IBM boosted the speed of the IBM PC AT by replacing the CPU with a 8-MHz Intel 80286.
- Jim Manzi was named chief executive officer of Lotus Development Corp.
- Microsoft released Microsoft Word v3.0 for DOS.
- Compaq Computer joined the Fortune 500 list faster than any company in history.
- Compaq Computer shipped its 500,000th personal computer.
- Apple Computer replaced the Macintosh 512K with the Macintosh 512K Enhanced, for US$2,000.
- Satellite Software International changed its name to WordPerfect Corporation.

May: 2,863 St. Helenians signed a citizenship petition, to be sent to the President of the European Parliament.137

137. “St. Helenians” is a neologism used in this database. The inhabitants of the island are known among themselves as “Saints.”
May: On St. Helena, to deal with chronic unemployment, Governor Francis Eustace Baker implemented a “3 day working scheme.”

PC MOS 1.0 shipped.

Quarterdeck Office Systems shipped DESQview 2.0.

Microsoft released Excel 1.04 for the Macintosh II.
June: The keel was laid for a new RMS *St. Helena*.

News items relating to the development of ELECTRIC WALDEN technology:

- IBM announced the PS/2 Model 70, as 16-, 20-, and 25-MHz 80386 systems.
- Microsoft shipped Windows 2.1 as Windows/286 and Windows/386.
- Microsoft released MS-DOS 4.0, including a graphical/mouse interface.
- Intel introduced the 80386SX, like the 80386 but with a 16-bit data bus.
June: On St. Helena, a Fisheries Association was formed.

October 31, Tuesday: At Aberdeen, Prince Andrew launched a replacement RMS St. Helena with a mixed cargo/passenger layout, to ply the route between Cardiff and Cape Town.
Alasdair James Edwards’s *Fish and Fisheries of Saint Helena Island* (University of Newcastle Centre for Tropical Coastal Management Studies).

E.O. Wilson’s *Success and Dominance in Ecosystems: The Case of the Social Insects* (Inter-Research).


The Human Genome Project was launched with the goal of sequencing all 3 billion base pairs of human DNA by 2005.

**THE SCIENCE OF 1990**

Mongolia invited the American Museum of Natural History to reinstate excavations in the Gobi desert.

May: The Market of Saint Helena re-opened after refurbishment.
May: US Marine Eric Larson, Gulf War conscientious objector, was formally charged with “desertion in time of war,” an offense punishable by execution in front of a firing squad, and became the first of our conscientious objectors since WWI to thus face a death sentence for taking his stand. Some 2,500 military personnel would apply for CO status during this military operation.

19 survivors of a Saudi Arabian oil tanker explosion found safe harbor in St. Helena.

July: A license was issued for the Oman Sea One to fish for crabs in St. Helena’s waters.

Three Russians, Nikita Pokrovsky, Mikhail T. Gusev, and Piotr M. Saveliev, led The Thoreau Society in a non-violence walk from the plaque marking the site where Henry was put in jail for refusing to fund slavery and the war upon Mexico (Massachusetts has long since torn down this Middlesex County prison that used to stand in the center of Concord, replacing it with several much more commodious facilities just down the road), out to Walden Pond, the site of Thoreau’s experiment in freedom.

One of these Russians, Piotr, had just come from leading a non-violence walk in the heart of Russia, a walk “in search of the green stick” which began in Yasnaya Polyana at the grave of Lev Nikolievich Tolstoy, the great Russian apostle of nonviolence.
I would like to support these three in their effort. I would like to provide them with a literary and theoretical underpinning for their fine use of the corpus of our Henry. We need this because there is a real question whether Mohandas Karamchand Gandhi and the Reverend Martin Luther King, Jr. were as nonviolent as Tolstoy. Gandhi explained forthrightly that for him nonviolence was a mere tactic, not a way of life. He said that Russians did not understand the tactic of non-violence, that had it been the Russians in India rather than the British in India, his people would have been forced to resort to violence. The Reverend King likewise.

One may usefully contrast Gandhi with Saul Alinsky on means and ends. Here is Gandhi:

> Where there is no desire for fruit, there is no temptation for untruth or himsa. Take an instance of untruth or violence, and it will be found that at its back is the desire to attain the cherished end.

And here is Alinsky:

> The man of action views the issues of means and ends in pragmatic and strategic terms.... He asks of ends only whether they are achievable and worth the cost; of means, only whether they will work.

August: The FBI’s Computer Analysis and Response Team developed a capability to recover evidence from seized computers and computer disks.

The Oman Sea One capsized in heavy seas in the vicinity of St. Helena with the loss of 4 seamen.
June: Regrettably, a proposal by Mr. Yu Sang Lee to bring inward investment to St. Helena was turned down by the government.

Russian authorities uncovered 30 mass graves at Miednoje, a hundred miles north-west of Moscow, containing the remains of 6,287 Polish prisoners from the Ostashkov Island camp on Lake Seliguer (this camp’s records show that it had contained 6,500).
May: St. Helena Day celebrations included sealing a “time capsule” to be opened in 2193 if there is still life on this planet.
The idea of a shuttle service between St. Helena and Ascension Island, to serve the many St. Helenians working at Cape Town and in the Falkland Islands, was finally abandoned as unrealistic. In this era of diesel engines St. Helena has fewer links to the world than in the days of sail.

Dutch Captain and drug smuggler Willem Merk had been imprisoned on St. Helena it was discovered that his ship carried some enormous quantity of cannabis resin. The authorities would scuttle his vessel just off Lemon Valley. During this year he escaped, some say by using soap to make impressions of prison keys that a guard had left lying around while going to the toilet. Also, he apparently left an audiotape of himself snoring in his cell while setting sail on a rough wooden boat he’d paid an islander to make, an islander whom he’d linked up with during an extended exercise break (or perhaps, more prosaically, he escaped aboard a yacht a friend had brought to the island a few days earlier). What we know for sure is that this man did reach Brazil, and upon landing did appear at the Dutch embassy, and would be repatriated to Holland as a free man.

In an attempt to revive the phenomenal 19th-Century success of coffee beans grown on St. Helena, David Henry founded “The Island of St Helena Coffee Company.” Perhaps if they went back and restored the same type of tree to the same original sites, and did everything over again exactly the same way....
To circumvent a problem of not being able to find enough physically fit young people to fill its ranks, the British military was obliged to lower its admission standards (in the following year the US Army would be obliged to follow suit).

Governor David Leslie Smallman was shut off in his office for several hours by some 60 St. Helenians protesting their unemployment or low income or something — this was reported in The Daily Telegraph of London to have constituted a “riot.”
Beau W. Rowlands et al’s THE BIRDS OF ST HELENA: AN ANNOTATED CHECKLIST (British Ornithology Union).

A black winged cat was observed in Northwood, Middlesex. The wings were 2 to 3 inches back from the shoulder blades and were about 8 inches long, 4 inches wide, and an inch thick. They flapped as the cat ran.

CATS WITH WINGS
Phil Currie suggested that *T. rex* had been a social animal that hunted in packs.

Based on Y chromosomes Peter Underhill inferred that all modern humans share a common ancestor, bolstering the 1987 announcement from Cann and Wilson. This suggests a “bottleneck” event (population crash) among human ancestors living in Africa, roughly 150,000 years ago.

A research team led by Paul Sereno discovered *Rugops primus* (“first wrinkle face”) in the Sahara. This dinosaur’s resemblance to South American fossils suggested that Africa had separated from the ancient landmass of Gondwana more recently than previously supposed.

Sally McBearty’s and Alison Brooks’s *The Revolution That Wasn’t* challenging the long-held notion of a “big bang” in human intellectual evolution approximately 40,000 years ago. Instead, they cited evidence for earlier appearances of modern behaviors.

Philip Ashmole and Myrtle Ashmole’s *St. Helena and Ascension Island: A Natural History* (Anthony Nelson of Oswestry).


*Walden*: We belong to the community. It is not the tailor alone who is the ninth part of a man; it is as much the preacher, and the merchant, and the farmer. Where is this division of labor to end? and what object does it finally serve? No doubt another may also think for me; but it is not therefore desirable that he should do so to the exclusion of my thinking for myself.
At the Anniversary dinner of the War Resisters League the League Peace Award was presented to the Christian Peacemaker Teams.

British citizenship and right of abode was granted to St. Helenians!

The Pledge of Allegiance was ruled unconstitutional in a Federal district court because since 1954 it has contained the additional formulation “under God.”
Neil McCulloch’s GUIDE TO THE BIRDS OF ST HELENA AND ASCENSION ISLAND (The Royal Society for the Protection of Birds).

Phil Hoose’s THE RACE TO SAVE THE LORD GOD BIRD, the Ivory-billed Woodpecker *Campephilus principalis*.


Professor J. Stanley Lemons’s and Dr. George Kellner’s RHODE ISLAND, THE INDEPENDENT STATE, THE 350TH ANNIVERSARY HISTORY OF RHODE ISLAND (commissioned by the Rhode Island Historical Society).
May 30, Friday: Altobridge was placed in receivership and its stock ceased trading, which meant that plans on bringing 2G cell phone service to St. Helena during this year were going to need to be delayed. Taking a bright view of this development, the company that has a telecom monopoly over the island, Sure South Atlantic Ltd., a subsidiary of Bahraini Batelco, issued a press release indicating that what this meant was that the people of the island would need to wait a year or more, but might very well then receive 3G or 4G service. Wait for it! The difference would be that if Altobridge had not gone bankrupt, the best 2G service it would have provided would have amounted to 0.236 Mb per second, whereas the 3G or 4G service that might eventually result would be hopefully at speeds of at least 21 Mb per second, easily two orders of magnitude more robust.

"MAGISTERIAL HISTORY" IS FANTASIZING: HISTORY IS CHRONOLOGY

COPYRIGHT NOTICE: In addition to the property of others, such as extensive quotations and reproductions of images, this "read-only" computer file contains a great deal of special work product of Austin Meredith, copyright ©2014. Access to these interim materials will eventually be offered for a fee in order to recoup some of the costs of preparation. My hypercontext button invention which, instead of creating a hypertext leap through hyperspace—resulting in navigation problems—allows for an utter alteration of the context within which one is experiencing a specific content already being viewed, is claimed as proprietary to Austin Meredith — and therefore freely available for use by all. Limited permission to copy such files, or any material from such files, must be obtained in advance in writing from the "Stack of the Artist of Kouroo" Project, 833 Berkeley St., Durham NC 27705. Please contact the project at <Kouroo@kouroo.info>.

“It’s all now you see. Yesterday won’t be over until tomorrow and tomorrow began ten thousand years ago.”

- Remark by character "Garin Stevens" in William Faulkner’s INTRUDER IN THE DUST
Prepared: November 29, 2014
This stuff presumably looks to you as if it were generated by a human. Such is not the case. Instead, someone has requested that we pull it out of the hat of a pirate who has grown out of the shoulder of our pet parrot "Laura" (as above). What these chronological lists are: they are research reports compiled by ARRGH algorithms out of a database of modules which we term the Kouroo Contexture (this is data mining). To respond to such a request for information we merely push a button.
Commonly, the first output of the algorithm has obvious deficiencies and we need to go back into the modules stored in the contexture and do a minor amount of tweaking, and then we need to punch that button again and recompile the chronology—but there is nothing here that remotely resembles the ordinary "writerly" process you know and love. As the contents of this originating contexture improve, and as the programming improves, and as funding becomes available (to date no funding whatever has been needed in the creation of this facility, the entire operation being run out of pocket change) we expect a diminished need to do such tweaking and recompiling, and we fully expect to achieve a simulation of a generous and untiring robotic research librarian. Onward and upward in this brave new world.

First come first serve. There is no charge.
Place requests with <Kouroo@kouroo.info>. Arrgh.